# **Sunshine and Moonshine**

# By KionaKina

Submitted: July 31, 2007 Updated: February 22, 2008

A new story about my OC, Kay, and her friends, life, lovelife, and so on.

Ryuuzashipping EternalShipping

Ratings may change

### Provided by Fanart Central.

http://www.fanart-central.net/stories/user/KionaKina/47477/Sunshine-and-Moonshine

Chapter 1 - Welcome Back to Duelist Kingdom, Ms. Simms	3
Chapter 2 - Away to Domino	6
Chapter 3 - Observation	10
Chapter 4 - A Serious Duelist	15
Chapter 5 - Great, Egoman's Hosting a Tournament	20
Chapter 6 - The Duel Disk, Locater Card, and Rare Hunters	26
Chapter 7 - Kicking Off Battle City	31
Chapter 8 - A total of four Locater Cards and a Group of Thugs	37
Chapter 9 - The Rare Hunters Mean Buisiness	43
Chapter 10 - Wait, you're a WHAT?!	55
Chapter 11 - The Deadliest Duel pt. 1	63
Chapter 12 - The Deadliest Duel pt. 2	72
Chapter 13 - The Deadliest Duel pt. 3	76
Chapter 14 - The Finals Begin	85
Chapter 15 - The Dark Spirit	96
Chapter 16 - The Second Duel pt. 1 Embodiments of Apophis	111

Chapter 17 - The Second Duel pt. 2 Mystical Beast Serket	121
Chapter 18 - A Darker Shadow Is Revealed	132
Chapter 19 - Two Connections	135
Chapter 20 - Shadow Games Take a Whole New Level pt. 1	139
Chapter 21 - Shadow Games Take a Whole New Level pt. 2	151
Chapter 22 - Shadow Games Take a Whole New Level pt. 3	158
Chapter 23 - The Ancient Text	172
Chapter 24 - The Duel Tower	179
Chapter 25 - Four-Way Duel	190
Chapter 26 - Near the Brink of Death pt. 1	198
Chapter 27 - Near the Brink of Death pt. 2	210
Chapter 28 - She won't wake up!	224

## 1 - Welcome Back to Duelist Kingdom, Ms. Simms

Yugi, Jounouchi, Honda, and Anzu trudged toward the castle tiredly. Yugi and Jounouchi finally had all ten star chips. Now they could get out of the forest.

They looked up when they heard a fast moving jet and it was really close. They immediately ran closer to the castle and saw a figure walking up the steps to the castle.

"Who is that?" Anzu asked.

"A HOT GIRL!: Jounouchi gried happily.

"LEMME SEE!" Honda yelled, snatching the looking glass from Jounouchi. Yugi sweatdropped.

"Where'd you get that, Jounouchi?" he asked. Jounouchi cleared his throat awkwardly.

"I'd...rather not say." Anzu and Yugi sighed.

"Wow, you're right Jounouchi. But why is a girl like her going up to the castle?"

"...I don't know."

"C'mon, guys," Anzu snapped. "We have bigger things to worry abou tthen some girl."

"Hey, this is heaven for a guy, to meet two hot girls in such a short time. I mean, first Mai and now her."

"Ok, first of all, you haven't met that girl. Second of all, YOU'RE AN IDIOT."

"Hey, I resent that!"

"Do you even know what resent means?" Honda asked.

"...shut up."



"Pegasus, what the hell did you do to my little brother?!" Seto demanded. Pegasus sipped some red wine.

"I sent his soul to the shadow realm." Seto rolled his eyes.

"Please, that's the stupidest thing I've ever heard. What did you really do to him?!"

"Believe what you want, Kaiba. Point is, he's gone."

"Well I want him back and I want you to leave my company alone." Pegasus raised an eyebrow.

"That's an awful big request."

"I demand to duel you for both my brother and my company!"

"I'm a busy man, Kaiba. Tell you what-"

"Uncle!" a voice called out. A girl wearing a long (FAKE) fur coat, black sunglasses, a large sunhat, a short black dress, and black boots walked into the room holding a vanilla folder in her hand. "There you are." She looked at Seto. "Oh, I'm sorry. I didn't realize you had company."

"Don't worry, welcome home." Pegasus walked over to her and hugged her.

"Here are those documents you asked for. I made sure they did not leave out anything."

"That's my girl." He smiled and took the folder. "Thanks for going."

"It's no problem. Besides, I got some shopping done. Wait til you see the presents I brought. Well, I'm going to my room."

"Alright then." Kay walked out of the room and Pegasus handed the folder to Croquet.

"Put this in my office, please."

"Yes sir." He walked away. Seto frowned impatiently.

"You were saying?!"

"Oh, yes." Pegasus reached into his pocket and pulled out five starchips then handed them to Seto.

"Here are five star chips, you need ten to enter my castle. Yugi has ten. Duel him for five of his star chips and then I'll duel you, Kaiba-boy."

Seto did not answer, he just took the chips and walked out of the room.



Kay took off her jacket, sunglasses, and hat. She pulled her hair out of its bun. The wavy blonde hair fell an inch past her shoulders. Her green eyes searched the room for anything out of the ordinary.

Nothing. She brushed out her hair and put it in a pull-back. Then she slipped off her boots and got on her bed then laid on her stomach and started to write on some sky blue stationary.

Dear Adelinda,

how is school? I just got ome from Great Britain. It was really nice there. Next time you come and visit I'll give you the present I bought for you. Bet you can't guess what it is.

The Black Cat strikes again! I won my last tournaments with ease. I'm thinking of going for European champion instead of just German. What do you think? And do you think I should use my Blue Eyes White Dragons? I never did and it seems a shame that I made them and never duel with them.

How is your friend, Annarosa, doing? You never sent me any pictures of you two. Why is that? C'mon, sis. I only see you two times during the year: Christmas and Summer. Throw me a bone.

Well, I'm gonna wrap up this letter, then unwrap it, put it in an envelope, and send it to you. Yeah, I know that joke sucked. Have mercy on me here.

Love ya, Sis.

Sincerelly,

Kay-Chan

## 2 - Away to Domino

Kay put her hair into a pull back and slipped on a black dress similar to the one she had worn yesturday, tights, and some black heels. She applied some lipstick, blush, eyeshadow, and mascara then walked out of her room.

It about three in the afternoon. She had spent her morning working on some new cards in her pajamas. Now she was bored.

She looked around for Pegasus.

"Where is everyone?" she asked. "Oh! The tower." Kay ran off to the tower and gasped when she saw two suits carrying a knocked out Pegasus and Croquet. "Croquet! What happened to him?!" she cried.

"Miss Simms, I'm afraid your uncle is gravely ill. We're rushing him to the hospital."

"B-but will he be ok?" she whispered.

"We're not entirely sure. He disappeared after he lost in a duel with Yugi Mouto and we found him in this condition in his tower."

"After losing to Yugi Mouto?"

"Miss Simms, we feel that...it would be best if you are not on the island while your uncle is in this condition."

"So where should I go?"

"Well...we have already arranged an apartment for you in Domino City. You can stay there and attend High School."

"Are you kidding me? High school?"

"Please, Miss Simms. We're doing this for you. With all the stress around here it would be better for you to enter a new enviornment to keep your mind off things."

"...fine, when do I leave?"



"B-big brother...grr, where IS he?" Mokuba cried frantically, carrying a silver briefcase in his hand and looking around frantically. Mokuba, Yugi, Anzu, Jounouchi, and Honda were outside of the castle,

looking for Seto. "Is he really on this island?"

"We looked around but we couldn't find him." jounouchi sniggered a bit.

"Maybe Kaiba's soul was summoned to heaven." Anzu glared furiously at him.

"Jounouchi, don't make jokes like that!" she snapped. Then she becamse serious. "Hey...where did Bakura go?" she asked.

"He's probably still looking for Kaiba in the castle..." Jounouchi said. Yugi looked up and so did Mokuba. Seto stood there on the top of the stairs to the castle, eyes narrowed against the sun.

"Nii-sama..." Mokuba thought, tears forming in his eyes. Seto looked down and gasped.

"Mokuba..."

"Kaiba!" Jounouchi and Yugi said.

"Big brother!" Mokuba cried, running up the stairs, tears running down his face.

"Mokuba!" Mokuba jumped up and hugged Seto.

"For Kaiba...Mokuba was the final piece. Maybe the puzzle of his heart is complete at last." Jounouchi was getting all emotional.

"Aw geez. Th-they're so...so brotherly...I just can't hate 'em. Th-those jerks!" he sobbed.

"And you got the prize money, Jounouchi!" Anzu added. "You can pay for your sister's operation." Jounouchi walked over to Yugi and held up the envelope.

"Yugi...is it really ok if I take this money?" he asked. Yugi nodded.

"It is! You were the real champion of the kingdom." Honda crossed his arms.

"That's true...it was a miracle he advanced to the finals..."

"He raised his level the most!" Anzu exclaimed.

"Yugi...I owe you big time."

"Jounouchi for us, the real test has begun." Yugi winked. "Someday, until the day you beat me, you can owe me one." Anzu looked at Jounouchi.

"What's your record and Yugi's record?" Jounouchi rubbed th e back of his head.

"Well, starting from a week ago and uncluding this kingdom, wins 0, losses 187..." Anzu and Honda sweatdropped.

"Oh man..."

"He's got a long way to go..."

Seto and Mokuba looked at Yugi. Yugi noticed this and looked back.

"Kaiba...take good care of Mokuba, ok?"

"Yugi...I owe you for saving Mokuba...but tell the other Yugi our battle isn't over yet.." Seto turned and walked away. Mokuba laughed.

"Seto and I are flying out of here in our private helicopter! Too bad YOU losers don't have one!" he taunted.

"What?!" Jounouchi yelled. "Why you little @#\$%!"

"By the way, how ARE we getting home?" Anzu asked. Seto turned around.

"Let's go, Mokba! Small fry like them will have to swim in the ocean." Mokuba looked back at them for a moment.

"...hey Seto...let's let them ride in the helicopter too." Seto turned sharply.

"What?!"

"Please?" Mokuba added meekly.

"Grr..."

Kay walked up to her helicopter, the staff carrying her bags.

"Have a safe trip, Miss Simms."

"Thanks Croquet. Take care of my uncle." He nodded and she got on the helicopter. They took off and she looked back at Duelist Kingdom with a sigh.

"You guys better thank big brother for letting you come!" Mokuba said. Seto glared.

"Once we're back in Japan we're EVEN, got it?" Seto barked. Mokuba laughed. Yugi looked out the window and back at the island.

"Bye Duelist Kingdom."

Seto was surprised to see and Industrial Illusions chopper fly by at about twice their speed.

"What's that about?" he asked himself.

Ok, huzzah. The scenes involving Yugi an dthem is not from the show, it's from the manga and some was changed or removed soyeah.		

#### 3 - Observation

Beep...beep...beep

kay groaned and opened her eyes groggily.

"FIVE TIL EIGHT?!" she cried. "I OVERSLEPT!"

It's been about two days since Kay moved to Domino. She had finished with her apartment and had dyed her uniform jackets black, red, and blue, and some of the skirts she dyed black and white.

Kay put on a black jacket and a white skirt then took off running after grabbing a granola bar and her bag.

She munched on the granola bar as she ran. Kay got to an intersection and ran across the crosswalk, considering no cars were coming. However, a limo cruising about ten miled over the speed limit sharply turned the corner and braked quicky before hitting her.

Seto growled angrilly and looked out the window to glare at her.

"What the hell are you doing?!" he yelled. She stopped and glared right back at him.

"I don't know if anyone told you, but you STOP at a crosswalk."

"And I don't know if anyone told YOU, but you go on GREEN, NOT red."

"Yeah and ever heard of obeying the speedlimit?!" she shrilled, feeling her blood boil.

"Why you little-"

"Look, whatever. I'm late enough as it is, I don't have time to deal with you." She took off running again. Seto scowled and closed his window.

"Stupid girl."

Kay made it to school and by the time she got into the office, her hair was a complete mess and she was out of breath. The secretary tilted he rhead.

"May I help you?"

"I'm...a new student here. I need my locker, textbooks, and schedule, please."

"Name?"

"Kay. Kay Simms." The secretary typed on her computer then smiled and stood up.

"Alright. Wait here, I'll go and get your stuff."

"Ok..." The secretary left and Kay collapsed in a chair.

She was soon ready and made it to her first class by the time the bell rang. Her teacher was tall man who looked to be in his forties with dark hair, darker eyes, and a very professional wardrobe. But he did not look evil.

"Yes ma'am?" he asked, when he saw her.

"I'm your new student."

"Miss...Simms?"

"Yes."

"Well, we welcome you to Domino High. This is your first time attending a high school, correct?" Kay nodded, already hating the interrogation. She prayed he'd drop the questions. "You were home schooled?"

"Yessir."

"Ah, well I'm sure everyone here will be sure to make you feel at home." She faked a smile.

"Thank you." He smiled back. She thought herself, "Pfft, yeah right."

"Alright. Well, take any available seat you want. Oh, my name is Mr. Smith, by the way." She nodded.

Kay had already wanted a seat in the back corner. As she walked to her seat, she heard people whispering about her. She wanted to curse at all of them.

Once she took her seat, Mr. Smith began the lesson. Kay wrote down some notes and ignored the rest of his lecture.

She spent her class observing the students.

Kay had not attended a school since she was in sixth grade. But she never forgoet the way tudents were stereotyped into groups, clicks. Preppies, goths, emos, skaters, jocks, band, geeks, nerds, drama, buisiness, art, poets, and so on. There were endless stereotypes, infinite groups.

Within the class period, Kay figured what group almost all of the students were in.

School was almost like a filing cabinet when it came to the students. Each click was a different colored tab on a vanilla folder bunched together with the rest.

Although school was not THAT strict on the groups. Some people hung with two or more clicks. Some clicks were able to hand with another one. It all varied.

But she was storing the information in her mind. Who should she avoid, who would be safe to ask to be a partner on an assignment if she had to ask. It was all data. The atudents were data in her brain.

She was not there to make friends. She was there to hold it out until she was out of that rathole of a town.

Kay did not like meeting strange people. It was weird and awkward. She also did not want a personal relationship with anyone here because when she moved back with her uncle, she'd probably never see them again.

I mean, sure you can e-mail and IM, but it isn't the same.

The most she would accept was maybe a person to talk to around here.

But until then, her only friend would be her laptop, notebooks, and books.

Kay continued observing the students and groaned inwardly when she recognized one. It was that stupid idiot from the limo.

He, like her, was done with the assignement and was reading. She narrowed her eyes slightly at him and continued scouring the room for mor einformation on her classmates that was obtainable through the quiet room.

A few girls were eyeing the guy like a piece of meat. Perhaps he has a fanclub. Gross.

Some of the guys were eyeing the girls. One had blonde hair and was drooling a bit. Looks like one of those street tough guys wwho chased girls. And next to him was his friend with brown hair in a spike.

Kay rolled her eyes briefly. She saw most of the people in the room were stupid. It was not a theory, it was obvious by the way their stuff was organized, their behavior, and so on.

Some might be smart on the inside, but they all clearly acted stupid on the outside. What a waste of a young mind.

The bell rang and Kay put her stuff together and walked out of the room silently. She went to her locker and dropped off her history book then walked to Pre-Cal.

Great, that guy was there too.

"Don't tell me we have the same schedule!" she thought in irritation.

The rest of her classes were boring.

Finally a period that did not involve anything much: lunch.

Kay sat outside on a bench that was in the shade of a tree and ate her sandwich and chips. She worked on her new card designs and a new game she was developing based off of one of the books she was writing.

"Hi there." She looked up to see a boy with spiky, tri-colored hair.

"Um...hi?" she answered.

"I'm sorry to bother you, but I was wondering if you wanted to eat lunch with me and my friends."

"Thanks for the offer, but I kind of like eating by myself."

"Ok. Well, my name's Yugi so if you ever want to-"

"Wait, Yugi? As in Yugi Mouto? The Yugi who beat Pegasus?"

"Um, yes." Kay immediately glared a stood up.

"You little pest! It's your fault my uncle is in a coma!"

"What?!"

"Ever since you beat my uncle, he's been in a coma. And because of that, I had to come here. I swear to you Yuqi, if my uncle dies, I WILL get you."

"B-but I didn't do anything."

"Liar! And if you know what's good for you, you'll stay away from me."

"Hey Yug, what's going on?" Jounouchi asked. Yugi turned to see Jounouchi, Honda, and Anzu walking up to him.

"Um...well..."

"So, you're his groupies."

"Excuse me?" Anzu asked. Kay glared.

"I'm the neice of Pegasus, and thanks to Yugi, he's out cold in a coma. And if my uncle doesn't pull through, you're all gonna get it." Jounouchi frowned.

"Look, I dunno what's da deal wit your uncle, but Yugi-"

"Save it! You all are a bunch of liars. Everyone thinks Yugi is such a greast duelist, but he might have killed my uncle! and he's one of the only people I have left. So for your sakes, you'd beeter hope he pulls through."

"Now hold on!" Honda said. "Yugi did not do anything to your uncole. Do you even know what Pegasus did? He too khis grandpa's-" Kay glared daggers at Honda and he shut up due to the sharpness of her glare.

"Don't talk to me." He bit his lip and Kay gathered her stuff and walked away. She tried to shove past Kaiba. "Out of my way, jerk."

"Excuse me?" he said coldly, blocking her path by extending his arm to the wall. She looked up at him, hand on her hip.

"What? You hard of hearing or stupid? I said 'out of my way, jerk."

"Do you even know who you're talking to, wench?"

"No and I do not care." He glared.

"Weoll start caring. I'm Seto Kaiba, CEO of Kaiba Corp, Miss Big Shot."

"Well sorry, Kaiba, but my give-a-damn's busted. Your status doesn't scare me one bit. Now move." She pushed him out of her way and kept walking. Seto frowned.

"What the hell is her problem?" he asked.

Huzzah. Done. Well, you all are probably like "who was that and what did you do with Kay?"

I'm sad to say I never properly did her personality in my last story. She is actually suppossed to be pretty tough, spoiled, and have a bad temper at first. I never truly portrayed that properly.

I mean, she's a sweet person with a good heart, but she can also be very cold and harsh. My last story I softened her up by giving her a different background. This is the way it would go down if she were in the show.

Ok, I'm done ranting.

#### 4 - A Serious Duelist

Kay walked to her apartment and quickly did her homework.

"Man, I hate this city." She sighed and changed out of her uniform into her usual black dress (That's her favorite thing to wear and she has more than one black dress) and some dark jeans and boots.

After flipping her hair up into a messy bun, she walked outside and around the city.

Nothing was very interesting to her.

She came to a darker area of the city.

"Hey babe, what are you doing out here all by yourself?" a gruff voice asked. Kay turned and looked at him.

He was a tall, buff guy with short blonde hair and wild eyes which were wandering over her like she was a nice steak.

"Back off, slick. I'm not interested."

"Well I am."

"What do you want? A Medal? Now leave me alone."

"Hey, I don't know who you think you are, but nobody talks to me like that. Do you know who I am?"

"I don't know or care."

"Hirutani. You should learn to respect that name. Wouldn't want a pretty little face like yours to get hurt."

"Look, Hiru-whatever, I'm not some whore you can pick up off the street. How about this, we duel."

"Duel?"

"Ever heard of the game called Duel Monsters?"

"Who hasn't?" he asked. Kay smirked.

"I propose you and I duel each other in one hour, so long as you know a good duel arena."

"Duh, Kaibaland has a million."

"Fine. Kaibaland it is. Meet me there in an hour. If I win, you leave me alone and never come near me

again."

"And if I win?"

"I do whatever you want for a week."

"Whatever I want?" Hirutani asked, smirking evilly. Kay nodded. "Fine, you got yourself a duel, little lady. But just to be safe, you have to let one of my thugs follow you around until it's time for the duel, just to be sure you don't chicken out."

"Fine, but he can't come into my house."

"Deal."



An hour later, Kay stood outside of Kaibaland.

"What are YOU doing here?" a voice from behind her asked. She turned to see Seto, frowning at her.

"Well, not that it's any of YOUR buisness, but I have a duel."

"You? With who? A five-year-old?" Kay glared.

"No, with some thug."

"Some thug?"

"Yeah." She shrugged. "Doesn't matter, I'll win easy." At this moment, Hirutani walked up to them.

"Well, babe, ready to be my slave for an entire week?"

"Only in your dreams, hotshot."

"Hirutani?" Seto said. "You're dueling him?"

"Yeah? What of it?"

"He's the best duelist at Rintama high. Against a pro like me, it's nothing. But against you-"

"Hey Kaiba, why don't you keep your rich boy nose out of my buisness and let me take care of myself?" she snapped. Hirutani smirked.

"Listen to her, Kaiba. She's a big girl and doesn't need you to protect her. So she wants to play with the big boys, why do you care?" he asked. Seto frowned.

"I don't."

"Then get out of our way." Seto moved aside.

"Be my guest." She walked past him and Hirutani followed.

They entered the dueling arena.

"Prepare to lose!" Hirutani called as he placed his deck on the platform.

"That's my line."

"Duel!" 2000 life points appeared. They drew their hands.

"Ladies first!"

"So go already!" Kay yelled. Hirutani glared a drew a card.

"I play Claw Reacher in attack mode." Claw reacher appeared on the field with 1000 attack points. Kay rolled her eyes.

"Big whoop." She drew a card.

"I summon Koumori Dragon in attack mode." Koumouri Dragon appeared on the field with 1500 attack points. "Attack his Claw Reacher with Dark fireball." It attacked Claw Reacher and Hirutani lost 500 lifepoints. "I'll end my turn with two face downs. What's the matter? Did I hit you too hard?"

"Beginner's luck!" he snapped.

"Whatever. Just make your move." He drew a card.

"I play the all-powerful Ryu Kokki." The monster appeared with 2400 attack points.

"Now, Ryu Kokki, attack her Koumori Dragon with Skull Fist." It moved to attack.

"Hold it right there, reveal face down - Negate Attack. Now your monster's attack is over."

"I'll get you next turn."

"We'll see." She drew a card. "I switch Koumori dragon to defense mode." It switched to defense mode and had 1200 defense points. "Next I'll set this monster face down in defense mode. And that ends my turn." The face down card appears on the field.

"Pathetic." He drew a card. "Ryu Kokki, attack her dragon again!" Ryu Kokki punched Koumori Dragon and it shattered.

"That it?"

"Yes."

"Good." Kay drew a card. "I end my turn without making a move." Hirutani tsked and drew a card.

"I summon Goblin Attack Force." The goblins appeared with 2300 attack points. "Attack her face down monster." They did so and the card vanished, but then cyber jar reappeared on the field. "Hey, why isn't your monster gone?"

"Clearly you do not know the effects of my cyber jar. It's a nifty little monster to have. Effect one: it destroys all monsters on the field." Cyber jar self destructed and Hirutani's Ryu Kokki and Goblin Attack Force all disappeared. "Effect two: We each draw five card and can summon or set any level four or lower monsters that we pick up."

They each picked up five cards.

"I set two monsters face down." Kay placed the monsters on the field.

"I summon Baron of the Fiend Sword and Mystic Clown." The two monsters appeared, Baron had 1550 attack points, Mystic Clown had 1500. "And since it's still my attack phase, I attack both of your face downs."

Element Dragon and Blackland Fire Dragon doth disappeared. Kay shrugged and drew a card.

"I summon Curse of Dragon and attack your Mystic Clown." Curse of Dragon appeared with 2000 attack points and attacked Mystic Clown, causing Hirutani 500 points of damage. "And next I play one face down card. Give up yet?"

"Give up? I'm just getting started." He drew a card and smirked. "You're finished. I play Commencement Dance and sacrifice my Mystic Clown and my Jigen Bakudan to summon Performance of Sword." Mystic Clown disappeared and Performance of Sword appeared with 1950 attack points.

"Big deal. My dragon has 50 more attack points."

"Not for long. I equip Performance of Sword with Invigoration, which raises her attack points by 4000." She now had 2350 attack points. "Go, Performance of Sword, obliterate her Curse of Dragon." She went for Kay's dragon.

Kay smirked. "You are so predictable."

"What?!"

"Reveal face down, Reverse Trap. So instead of gaining attack points, your Performance of Sword loses attack points."

"What?!"

Performance of Sword's attack points flew down from 2350 to 1550.

"And I active my other face down, Reinforcements, which gives my Curse of Dragon 500 extra attack points." Curse of Dragon's attack went to 2500.

"NO!"

"Yes. Curse of Dragon, destroy his Performance of Sword." Curse of Dragon attacked Performance of Sword was destroyed. Hirutani lost 950 life points and was now only at 50. "Your turn is over." Kay drew a card and smirked.

"I play Ookazi. You lose 800 life points and this duel." Hirutani's lifepoints dropped to zero.

"I-I lost." Kay took her deck and walked off her platform.

"See you never, loser." She walked out of Kaibaland and yawned. "That killed fifteen minutes."

Little did she know, Kaiba had watched the whole duel.

"Hm...maybe she has more skill than I thought." He smirked evilly. "I should be able to crush her easily, though." He walked to his limo and was driven back to Kaiba Corp.

And...HUZZAH! My next chapter. Kay duels, she wins, yay for her. ^^

## 5 - Great, Egoman's Hosting a Tournament

The next day of school went by slowly.

Kay sat alone at lunch one again. She did not eat today, not hungry at all for whatever reason. She was working hard on her laptop, researching Egyptology for soem inspiration for new card designs.

She remembered her uncle had traveled to Egypt and based Duel Monsters of an ancient form of the game played by ancient Egyptians sorcerors.

"Hi!" Kay looked up to see a smiling girl with blue eyes and long blue hair tied into a ponytail with a yellow ribbon.

"Um...hello."

"I'm Miho Nosaka, and you are?"

"Um...I'm Kay."

"Well Kay, do you mind if I join you?" Miho asked. Kay noticed she was holding a lunch tray. Shrugging uncomfortably, Kay nodded a bit.

"Sure, I guess..." Miho smiled and sat down. She ate her lunch while Kay worked.

"So, you're interested in Egyptology?"

"Er...sure. You can say that."

"Egypt is really cool. I want to go there someday."

"Me too." The bell rang and Kay gathered her stuff. "Well, I'll see you around, Miho."

The next day, Miho sat with Kay at lunch again. She talked a little bit more to her but wondered why she continued sitting there. Kay was not exactly acting friendly.

The day after that, Miho sat there again.

"Do you enjoy my company?" Kay asked, amusement flickering in her eyes.

"Well...you seem like you could use a friend, and you're not mean or anything."

"Ah, I see. Well, I admire your persistance."

"What do you mean?" Miho asked. Kay shrugged.

"I don't know if you noticed, but I have not really spoken much the past two days."

"Maybe you're the quiet type?" Miho offered. This made Kay laughed.

"No, no. Quite the opposite, in face. I'm just bad at communicating with new people."

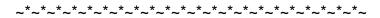
"Well, I'm not new, I'm not strange."

"That's true."

"So, do you want to hang out after school? My boyfriend, Ryou, and I are going to get some pizza."

"Well...um...sure, why not?" Miho smiled.

"Great."



Kay waited outside of the pizza place wearing a blue navel bearing T-shirt, a white jacket, and blue jeans.

Miho soon walked up, hand-in-hand with a boy who had long white hair and brown eyes.

"Hi Kay."

"Hello Miho."

"This is my boyfriend, Ryou Bakura."

"Nice to meet you, Kay."

"Likewise, Ryou." She shook hands with him.

"Well, let's get some pizza."

They went into the shop and ordered two pizzas.

Ryou and Miho were both very nice. Kay enjoyed their company very much vut she still avoided talking much.

Ryou stopped her from reaching for her wallet.

"It's my treat."

"Are oyu sure? I'd be happy to chip in."

"No no, it's my treat."

"Alright, if you're sure." Miho smiled and kissed Ryou on the cheek.

"He's so sweet." Ryou paid for the pizza.

"Well you two, this has been fun, but I need to head home."

"Alright, Kay. Thanks for coming along."

"No problem. Thanks for inviting me." She smiled and took her purse then walked outside and to her apartment.

There was an envelope waiting for her.

"What is this?" She looked at the return address. "Great, no return address." She ripped open the letter and read it.

Dear Ms. Simms,

you are cordially invited to attend the Battle City Duel Monsters tournament. For further information, please come to Clock Tower Square by nine fifteen tonight for the rules on registration.

We hope you will attend.

"Hmph, Battle City, eh? Fine. I'll go. I've got nothing better to do." Kay put the letter in her purse and walked back out of her apartment and to Clock Tower squared.

It was five til nine. There were already many duelists there.

She recognized a couple of them from International Tournaments. There was Mai Valentine, one of the top female duelists in the world.

Then there was Weevil Underwood, Mako Tsunami, and Rex Raptor.

Kay groaned as she saw two familiar faces: Yugi and Anzu.

Mai saw them too and immediately ran over to them.

"Hey Yugi, there you are!' Mai called, running over and waving.

"It's Mai Valentine!" Yugi said.

"Oh joy..." Anzu sighed.

"I KNOW you guys missed me."

"It's such a shame we don't hang out more often." Mai put Anzu in a playful headlock.

"Ye. It is. Isn't it?" Mai smirked. "You're looking snazzy, Tea. Is this a date?"

"We're just friends, Mai."

"Uh-huh." Kay rolled her eyes.

"Idiots." She walked away from them, just in case Mai tried to hug her next. Kay knew Mai from a German tournament she had gone to. They weren't close friends, at least not on Kay's terms.

Kay looked at the clock. 9:15.

"Who is hosting this tournament?" she asked. "They'd better hurry up and announce this."

"Look!" One person yelled. Kay looked up at one of the giant monitors and groaned.

"Oh great..." It was Seto.

"Greetings duelists. Welcome to the town of Domino." His face appears on every large screen on all of the sky scrapers. A scowl appeared on kay's face.

"What an egotist. I should start calling him Egoman."

"But more importantly, welcome to my tournament." Kay heard Mai and looked sto see her with Yugi and Anzu again.

"I don't know which is bigger: his ego or his melon on the big screen." This made Kay grin a little, but she still kept her distance and focused back on Seto.

"Let's hear what Kaiba has to say," Yugi said.

"I see you each recieved your private invite to Kaiba Corp's very exclusive duel monsters tournament and you had enough brains to show up here tonight."

Kay glared. "Who are YOU calling brainless, Egoman?" she snapped. Mai, Yugi, and Anzu looked at her.

"Hey! It's Kay!" Mai exclaimed. Kay groaned. She had not meant to call attention to herself. She forced a smile and waved.

"Hi Mai." Thank God, Seto decided to talk again. Now Mai would not want to relive old times.

"Being that you all are elite duelists, I've added special rules to my tournament just for experts. For example," The screen showed Seto's new version of the duel disk on his arm. "You will duel using these

new and improved duel disks."

Kay frowned. She hated to admit it, but it exceeded her uncle's dueling arenas by far. Stupid Kaiba Corp. She wanted to smack everyone around her who was oohing and ahhing over that duel disk.

"Another new rule that I designed for the tournament is that before each duel, both playera must ante up their rarest card and the loser of the duel must forfeit his card to the winner."

"Forfeit my Dark Magician?!" Yugi said.

"That means losing even one duel can ruin my deck!" Mai exclaimed. Kay tohught about this.

She had three Blue Eyes White Dragons and one Blue Eyes Ultimate Dragon. None of these monsters had ever appeared in a public duel before. Nobody in the world other than her uncle realized she owned these cards.

If she entered this tournament and played her Blue Eyes then LOST...

"I just won't lose..." she said silkily.

"My competition will make Pegasus and his Duelist Kingdom tournament look like a joke."

"EXCUSE ME?!" Kay yelled. "YOU WANNA SAY THAT TO MY FACE, KAIBA?!" A few people stared at her, but she ignored them, Crossing her arms, she muttered angrilly under her breath. "Stupid, inconsiderate jerk."

She glared at anyone who agreed with Kaiba and they shut up.

The wind picked up and everyone turned to see a chopper with Seto hanging out of it.

"Kaiba!" Yugi said.

"I hope he falls and cracks his head open..." Kay spat, glaring up at him with her arms crossed. **(Wow...just wow... ^^')** 

He threw his free arm up toward the sky.

"Don't forget to register and pick up your duel disks because exactly one week from today, my Battle City tournament begins!"

"You're on, Kaiba!" Yugi said.

Kay was still glaring.

"Prepare to lose, Kaiba. I'll show you who looks like a joke, you insensitive jerk." Kay walked away from clock tower square and then stopped. She was still peeved at him.

So, without really thinking this over, she called a taxi and drove off to Kaiba Corp.

Kaiba's chopper had just landed by the time she arrived and Seto was getting out of it. She got out of the taxi, slammed the door, and threw the money to the driver through the window.

She stormed up to him.

"Well, hello there, Egoman."

"What do you want?" he asked. She glared daggers.

"An apology, you insensitive bastard! How dare you insult my uncle and his Duelist Kingdom tournament."

"I have every right to insult scum like YOUR famil-"

#### SMACK!

He stared at her as her hand sharply smacked his face.

"You are SO damn lucky I did not hit you HARDER. I SWEAR Kaiba, you are going to regret ever messing with me."

"Am I really? It looks like your uncle did not teach you any manners."

"Oh yeah? What about you? You wouldn't know manners if they bit your rich boy @\$\$."

"You'd better watch your mouth, NOBODY talks to me like that."

"Well that makes me a nobody because I will talk to you however the hell I want. It's called Freedom of speech and you'd better get used to it." Kay jabbed him in the chest. "Just wait until your tournament, bud, and I'll teach you a lesson you'll never forget." He slapped her hand away.

"We'll just see about that."

"No, we won't." She turned sharply on her heel and got back into her taxi and they drove away.

Seto watched that taxi and narrowed his eyes.

"She won't last long...I'll see to it."

DAMN! I had to watch my DVD to get those lines right. \*Sighs\* I hope you enjoyed the chapter.

### 6 - The Duel Disk, Locater Card, and Rare Hunters

The next day of school came. Kay was sitting outside with Miho and Ryou.

"So you're invited to join in Kaiba's tournement?" Miho asked. Kay sipped her soda and nodded.

"Mmm-hmm."

"Well, Kay, that's great. I didn't realize you duel." Kay smirked at Ryou.

"I'll tell you a secret. I'm the German Duel Monsters and Dungeon Dice Monsters Champion."

"What?!" Ryou and Miho said. Kay nodded.

"Yup. They call me the Black Cat. I always wear a mask and black clothes when I duel in Germany. I intend on going for European champion at a tournament this spring."

"Wow, Kay. There's just no stopping you."

"Ya got that right."

"So you're picking up your duel disk after school today?"

"Yeah." Kay sighed. "I hate to admit it, but that duel disk far outranks the duel arenas my uncle made. It's kind of depressing, really." She stirred her drink with her straw.

"Well, don't get yourself down, Kay."

"I won't. Industrial Illusions specializes in duel monsters anyway. Kaiba Corp can never steal that title. If Kaiba tries anything, I'll kill him."

"You really don't like him, do you?" Ryou asked.

"Not really. He's so rude and he insulted my family. I won't take that sitting down."

"So what are you gonna do?"

Kay smirked evilly. "Smoke him at his own game in his own tournament. And Yugi too."

"Wait, you hate Yugi too?" Ryou asked.

"Yeah. What of it?"

"He's sort of our friend." Kay shrugged.

"Well, I don't like him."

"Why?" Kay banged her fist on the table.

"He's the one who put my uncle in a coma!"

"No, that's can't be." Ryuo nodded.

"Yeah. When Yugi beat Pegasus, he disappeared so Yugi went to find him. And when he got there, they were carrying Pegasus from the tower."

"Well, he's the only culprit we have, so unless you can show me evidence he's innocent or unless my uncle wakes up from the coma and says it wasn't Yugi, I will loathe him."

"Well...if that's what you want to do."



Kay entered the shop. There was a man there wearing glasses, a bandana, and had a bit of a beard and a mustache.

"Yes? May I help you?" he asked.

"I'm here to register for Battle City."

"Alright, what is your name, miss?"

"Kay Simms." He typed on his computer.

"Not bad, five stars. That's the highest rank."

"I'm sorry?" He turned the monitor around and she saw her a picture of herself, five stars on the bottom of the screen, and a picture of her Hirozonryu card.

"You see, each duelist has a ranking of stars. You need a rank of three and a half or more stars to be able to participate."

(NOTE: I am not sure this is accurate. In the manga, it said five or more stars. In the show, it only said five is the highest rank so I went with the show)

"I see. And why do you have a picture of my Hyozonryu card?" she asked.

"You see, all the duelists have the rarest card they have ever used in a duel on their page. Kaiba Corp. wen tto great lengths to learn everything about you and your deck."

"Mmm-hmm. Just like Kaiba to give himself such an advantage."

"Well, here is your duel disk. And you're in luck, it's my last one."

"Thanks." Kay took the duel disk and walked out of the shop.

She walked down an alley toward her apartment and heard someone from behind her.

"Who's there?" She spun around to see three men in dark cloaks. "Can I help you?"

"We are rare hunters."

"...rare what?"

"I see you've been blind to us. Well, we rob duelists of their rare cards. We stalk our prey, and now we are after your Hyozonryu, little girl."

"That's nice."

"So prepare to duel for it under Battle City regulations, or you won't escape this alley alive." Kay felt the prescence of more Rare hunters behind her. She smirked.

"Well with that kind of enthusiasm, how can I refuse?" She opened up the box containing her duel disk and put it on her right arm then put her deck in. The rare hunter did the same.

"Duel!" They both gained 4000 lifepoints.

Kay drew her hand.

"Ladies first." The rare hunter frowned but drew a card.

"I summon Sonic Bird." A monster which looked like a Bald Eagle wearing goggles appeared with 1400 attack points. Kay drew a card.

"I summon Getsu Fuhma in attack mode." A fierce woman dressed almost like a samurai with long red hair appeared with 1700 attack points. "And I'm not done yet, I equip her with Sword of Dark Destruction, which raises her attack points to 2100." The sword appeared in Getsu Fuhma's hand. "Getsu Fuhma, attack his Sonic Bird with Dark Blade Strike."

Getsu Fuhma slashed Sonic Bird and the Rare Hunter lost 700 life points.

"Grr." He drew a card. "I summon Giant Soldier of Stone in defense mode." The rock soldier appeared with 2000 defense points.

Kay drew a card.

"I'll play one card face down and summon Mataza the Zapper." The samurai appeared with 1300 attack points. "Now! Getsu Fuhma, destroy that rock." Getsu Fuhma attacked and the stone soldier crumbled. "Now, thanks to Mataza's special ability, she can attack you twice."

The Rare Hunter winced slightly.

"Mataza! Attack him directly with two shiruken blade attacks." Mataza attacked the rare hunter twice and he lost 2600 points.

Kay: 4000

Rare Hunter: 700

"Had enough?"

"Never!" He drew a card and smirked. "I pllay monster reborn to summon my Giant soldier of stone and then I sacrifice him to summon the Gear Golem: the Moving Fortress." (I think that's the right name) The...monster appeared with 2300 defense points. The Rare Hunter laughed. "I'm one card away from victory, you cannot win."

"Oh yeah?" Kay asked. She drew a card and smirked. "I sacrifice both of my monsters to summon my beautiful Blue Eyes White Dragon."

"What?!" the Rare Hunter said. The beautiful dragon appeared, its scales glittering white in the light, it's other scales blue like sapphires. It roared and seemed the glare menacingly at the rare hunter. you all know the attack strength of Blue Eyes, right? Well if oyu don't it's 3000. "ell, your monster may be powerful, but it can't do any life point damage thanks to my fortress." The rare hunter laughed.

"Think so? Well, sorry to disappoint you."

"WHAT?!"

"I play Fairy Meteor Crush! With its power, the amount of your defense subtracted from my Blue Eye's attack is dealt to your life points."

"No! I'm finished!"

"Now Blue Eyes, finish him off with White Lightening!" The Blue Eyes reared its head and blasted a powerful lightening attack, destroying the fortress. The aftershock of the blast hit the rare hunter and his life points hit zero.

Kay sighed.

"Well that was boring." The holograms disappeared and the rare hunter fell to his knees.

"I...I lost...but that's impossible..I have Exodia in my deck..." Kay ignored him and pushed past the other hunters, who were also shocked.

"Out of my way." She got home and put her duel disk away. She noticed there was a clear card with what looked like a puzzle piece in it and a note saying to go to Clock Tower Square in a week. "Fine, whatever."

## 7 - Kicking Off Battle City

Kay sat outside of Domino High, reading. Well, tomorrow was the day Battle City begins. She was pretty uninterested about the whole thing.

She was about halfway through her book and not paying attention to the world around her. This is why she shrieked when she felt someone poke her in the ribs. (My boyfriend does that to me... -\_- I hate it)

Kay spun around to kill whoever had done that and saw a girl with short, spike blonde hair, blue eyes, and an evil smirk snickering.

"Surprise!"

"...Alex?" Kay asked uncertainly, squinting her eyes slightly.

"In the flesh!" Alex hugged her. "Did ya miss me?"

"I haven't seen you since I moved away so...YES!" Kay hugged her back and they both squealed happily. "what are you doing here?"

"Well, my dad got a new job here and I heard oyu moved here so I decided to come."

"Well that's lucky."

"Indeed."

"Do you have your schedule?"

"Yup." Alex handed her the schedule and Kay scanned it.

"Alright! You have five classes with me."

"God is smiling on us." Kay laughed and nodded.

"Yeah."

"And you're smiling too, that's nice. I was told you got all serious without me around to make you have fun and act like a teenager."

"Well...uh..."

"Don't deny it." Kay smiled and shook her head a bit.

"Fine, whatever. Now come on, I should show you around the school."

"Right on!"



The school day ended and Kay and Alex walked outside together. Kay was really happy to have her old best friend back. Now she actually had someone at school she was close friends with.

"So you're entering a tournament?"

"Tomorrow it starts."

"Can I tag along?"

"Sure thing, Alex. It'll be more fun to have you taunt all of my opponents."

"HELL YEAH!" A limo pulled up and one of the suits who work for Pegasus walked out.

"Hello Miss Simms."

"Um, hello."

"I am you personal chauffeur."

"Oh, um, ok." ^ He opened the back door and a girl with hair almost exactly the same as Kay's stepped out, smiling.

"Hi Kay-chan."

"Adelinda!" Adelinda ran over and Kay picked her up and hugged her. "What brings you here?"

"I got a letter about uncle and decided to come live here with you. I'm already enrolled in Domino Elementary."

"But what about the dance academy?"

"They said I can transfer back whenever I want to."

"Really?" She nodded.

"I'm gonna take some dance classes here to keep myself in tip top shape." Kay laughed and hugged her again.

"Well, if you're sure, I'm glad you're here, sis."

At this time, Yugi, Jounouchi, Honda, and Anzu had walked outside and watched all of this.

"Wow...maybe that girl isn't too bad," Honda said.

"Hey, don't forget how she treated Yugi!" Anzu snapped.

"Well, she seems to think I'm the one who put Pegasus in a coma."

"No wonder she doesn't like you."

"Thanks Honda..." Yugi said. Anzu looked annoyed.

"He's just standing up for her because she's Miho's friend." Honda blushed.

"That's got nothing to do with it."

"Whatever." Yugi smiled and sweatdropped.

'Yuqi.'

'What is it Yami?'

'We need to focus on the Battle City tournament, it starts tomorrow. And I have a feeling that Kay wants us out of it, so keep your guard up if she challenges you.'

'I'm sure she doesn't duel and read minds like Pegasus did.'

'Perhaps not, but she's bound to have a powerful deck.'

'I know. Hopefully we can prove we did nothing to Pegasus and soon. I don't like people holding uneccessary grudges against us.'

'True. But be careful.'

"Yugi?"

"Huh?" He looked at Jounouchi.

"Ya spaced out, pal. Something wrong?"

"No, just thinking about the tournament." Jounouchi smirked.

"Yeah. Exciting, isn't it?"

"Yeah." Kay got in the limo with Alex and Adelinda and drove off. Yugi forwned a bit. 'And a bit unnerving...I got Kaiba, Kay, and some crazed person after me...'

Seto walked by. "Well, Yugi, ready for Battle City?" he smirked at him.

"Uh, yeah. I am."

"Good, because I am taking back my title as King of Games." Seto walked away to his limo.

"Man, rich boy's dreaming. You're gonna beat him in no time, Yugi. And I'm gonna bury the remains after ya smoke him." Anzu sighed.

"Jounouchi, weren't you paying attention the other day? Yugi said don't rush into another duel with Kaiba."

"Yeah, yeah. First thing I'm doing is winning back my Red Eyes from that Hunter freak!"

"Say what?" Anzu and Honda asked.

"Don't you remember?" Yugi asked. "After Jounouchi and I got our duel disks, he was ambushed and forced to duel them and he lost."

"Yeah...but I'm gonna beat him and get my precious Red Eyes back!" Jounouchi punched the air. Everyone else sweatdropped.



The sun rose and Kay washed up. She put on her jeans, blue tube top, white jacket, and boots. Then she puts her hair in a pull back, applied some make up, clipped on her blue choker, put the duel disk on her arm, ate a quick breakfast, then grabbed her deck and the clear card she had found in her duel disk.

Alex rang the doorbell and Kay answered it.

"you ready to go?" Alex asked. She was wearing a black trench coat, a tight red T-shirt, black jeans, and boots. Kay nodded.

"Yup." She locked the door behind her and they went to Clock Tower Square.

"Where's Adelinda?" Alex asked.

"She said she had a play date with a friend."

"OK." They got to Clock Tower Square and stood there, waiting for Seto to announce the beginning of the tournament.

They walked around aimlessly, awaiting the start.

"Greetings duelists! And welcome to Battle City."

"Huh? Where's that coming from?" Alex asked, looking around.

"Try up there." Kay pointed up and there was Kaiba Corp. blimp with a large monitor on it and Seto smirking evilly.

"It's time to put your dueling skills to the test. I hope none of you entered my tournament looking for friendly competition, because Battle City's gonna be an all-out war."

Kay smirked. "Sounds like my kind of game."

"Hell yeah." Alex grinned evilly.

"Before my Battle City tournament begins, I thought I should let you all know what you're in for in case you want to back out now." Kay clenched her fist.

"Bring it on, Egoman."

"Let's begin with my new duel disks. Everyone who I decided was good enough to enter recieved one. With it, you can duel anytime, anywhere."

"Thank you Captain Obvious!" Alex yelled. Kay sniggered.

"And, they contain a tracking chip that allows me to watch every move you make."

"Stalker much?" Alex mumbled.

"Tell me about it." seto put his deck in his duel disk.

"Next, let's talk about the most important tournament rule: the loser of each duel is required to fork over his rarest card to the winner." He held up his Blue Eyes White Dragon Card. "If you don't have the guts to risk losing your precious cards, then I suggest you forfeit now."

"In your dreams!" Kay said.

"And, anyone who's foolish enough can challenge me to a duel, because I'll also be competing in this tournament."

"Good, so I can crush you."

"But don't get your hopes up because I intend to win. And there's one duelist out there I can't wait to defeat."

"Bet it's Yugi...well I'm beating that pipsqueak first." Seto smirked again.

"And speaking of winning, only the eight best duelists will make it to the final round. And these finals will be held in a hidden location." Kay raised an eyebrow.

"Nice twist..."

"In order to find the finals, you'll need these locater cards." Seto held up a clear card, similar to the one Kay had.

"So that's what these are." She looked at hers. "I get it, it's a map. Collect all the pieces and you'll find the finals."

"You each recieved one with oyur duel disk but don't get too excited because one's not enough. You need six of them to make it to the tournament finals. Everytime you win a duel, you get a locater card from your losing opponent. When six cards are stacked together, they produce a map of Battle city and activate a global positioning satellite which will transmit the location to you."

"Man, he didn't spare any expense or detail, did he?" Alex asked.

"I'm wondering...aren't each of the locater cards different?"

"Yeah. Your point?"

"Well how do you know if you opponent has a different card from you?"

#### (Yes, I think about this stuff)

"Uh...I don't know."

"But the tournament finals are a long time away and most of you will be eliminated way before that. Alright, everything I just said and more can be found in my tournament rule book. Just remember: only one player can win and claim the title of the number one duelist in the world."

"And boys, that'll be me."

"Yup."

"Now get ready duelists, let the tournament begin!"

## 8 - A total of four Locater Cards and a Group of Thugs

"Wow Kay-chan, you totally creamed that guy!" Kay smirked and nodded.

"Yup. And this time we didn't bet locater cards so I won his rarest card." Kay grinned at Tri Horned Dragon card in her hand. It was a very powerful card. "My Dragons are impossible to beat, and I still didn't need to use my Blue Eyes."

"But you've beaten at least five duelists and only bet locater cards with one guy."

"True...perhaps I should try and fit in two more cards before I go to find Adelinda."

"How about that guy?" Alex pointed to a guy wearing a duel disk with a dark cloak on.

"...hm...sure." Kay smirked and walked up to the man. He was on a laptop, looking at the Duelists." "Hey you." He looked up. "Care to duel?" He smirked.

"Well, looky here. The prey comes right to me."

"Let me guess, another rare hunter?"

"I see you're well informed."

"I beat the last one who challenged me quickly, let's see if you actually make me break a sweat."

"You're a fiesty little one, aren't you?"

"You might say that."

"OK, fine. We'll have a duel."

"Wait, how many locater cards do you have?"

"Two."

"As do I. So let's wager our locater cards along with our rarest card."

"Fine, but your chances at victory are zero."

"Bring it, you caped clown."

They released their hologram projectors and drew their hands.

"Duel!" They each gained 4000 lifepoints.

#### Meanwhile at Kaiba Corp.

The workers were searching and observing the duels very carefully. Suddenly, Seto walked into the room.

"Mr. Kaiba."

"Have you found one of the Egyptian Gods, yet?"

"Sorry sir, but we're still searching."

"Hmph." Mokuba walked in with Adelinda at his side.

"Hey, my big sister is dueling." Adelinda pointed to the screen and you could see Kay's duel.

"That's your sister?" Seto asked. Adelinda nodded.

"Yeah. She's a really good duelist. I'll bet you she can win this whol tournament." Seto snickered a bit.

"We'll see."

"Mokie, do you think we can stick around to watch Kay-chan duel?" Adelinda asked.

"You'll have to ask my brother. We're following his agenda."

"Mr. Kaiba, please?" she begged, giving him a cute face. Seto looked at her.

"...fine."

"Yay!" Seto crossed his arms and focused his attention on the moniter. Now he could see how could this girl really was.

The duel proceeded and Kay won.

"HA! See that? You Rare Hunter dorks have no chance against a duelist of my ability."

"No...I-I...lost...AGH! MASTER!!!" the rare hunter yelled, gripping his forehead. Kay stared at him.

"H-hey, what's the matter with you?" she asked.

"Kay, that guy's going nuts!" Alex yelled.

"I can see that!"

"M-master, please forgive m-NOOOOOOOOO!"

"AHHHH!" Alex and Kay yelled. The hood of the man fell down and you could see a glowing eye on his forehead.

"Hello, Kay."

"H-how do you know my name? And what happened to your voice?"

The rare hunter laughed. "This pathetic fool is now just a doll and I'm talking through him using the power of my millennium rod. But you have not been properly exposed to the power of the millennium items so I'll save my explanation."

"Who are you, freak?"

"I am Marik, and you should remember that name."

"Why?"

"Necause I have watched you throung the eyes of my rare hunters and I know that you can get in my way."

"Oh really."

"Yes."

"Hmph. So you've been stalking me?"

"My hunters are everywhere, like it or not."

"Great. First Kaiba, now some freaky dude who controls people. Terrific, just terrific."

"People are stalkers, Kay."

"I know."

"Well, better watch out for those you care about and for yourself. We have our sights set on you and your rare cards. Although it's not registered in the computers, I know you have a Blue Eyes White Dragon."

"Don't even think about taking my Blue Eyes. I'll be dead before you get your paws on it."

"We'll meet again...sooner than you think..." The rare hunter fell over. Alex blinked.

"OK, that was FREAKY."

"Yeah, who IS this Marik guy?"

"I wish I knew. Come on, let's just go."

"Right." They walked away and wandered aimlessly around the park. Suddenly, a girl crashed into them, knocking them all to the ground.

"Ow!" Kay and Alex said.

"I'm sorry!" the girl cried. She was about their age with long brown hair in a ponytail, blue eyes, a brown jacket, white T-shirt, a silver cartouche with the name "Cat" carved on it, blue jeans, and tennis shoes.

"I-it's ok. Are you in a hurry?"

"Well, I am looking for my friend, Yugi. Have any of you seen him?" Kay looked annoyed at the mention of Yugi, but shook her head and answered calmly,

"No, we haven't seen him. Sorry." Cat sighed.

"Man, I've run all over Battle City looking for h- Hey, are you a duelist?"

"Um, yeah."

"Cool! How many locater cards have you won?"

"She's won four!" Alex said proudly. Kay smiled a bit and nodded.

"Yeah."

"That's great. You'll probably make it to the finals."

"Heh, that's what I'm hoping."

"My name is Cat."

"I'm Kay, this is my friend Alex."

"Wassup?"

"Don't you two go to Domino High?"

"Yes, why?"

"So do I. Wanna sit together at lunch sometime? I don't have enough female friends." Kay smiled and laughed a little.

"Sure."

```
"Cool. Well, I'm off. Maybe I'll see you guys tomorrow."
"Yeah, later Cat." She waved and ran off.
"Well, she seemed nice." Kay nodded.
"Yeah. Come on, let's keep going."
Soon enough, Kay got a call on her cell phone from Adelinda and went to go meet her. Alex was getting
tired so she decided to head home.
"Thanks for coming with me, Mokuba."
"No problem." They walked on and a gang of three thugs walked up.
"Hey, look guys, it's the little brother of that rich guy."
"Think he's got some money on him?"
"Heh, probably."
"Hey, who are you jerks?" Mokuba asked.
"Now now, be a good little boy and give us your money."
"I don't have any money."
"Mokuba, I'm scared!"
"Don't worry, Adelinda."
"Aw, how cute."
"Heh, yeah."
"Maybe we should snag em both so Kaiba will pay up."
"Good plan." One thug grabbed Adelinda and she started kicking like crazy.
"Hey! Let go!!"
"Adelinda!"
"Come on, you little brat."
"Let her go!"
```

"Aw, look, he's trying to be brave. Heh, stupid kid." They grabbed Mokuba and he tried to get away but was failing.

"Now, come on, let's get em out of here before we draw attention to ourselves."

"Help!" they cried.

"Yeah, let's g-" Th thug was cut off by a grunt as he was punched in the stomach.

"Kay!" Adelinda cried.

"Let go of my little sister!" She punched the thug holding Adelinda and he immediately dropped her and the other thug with Mokuba did the same. "Both of you, get out of here and go for help while I hold them off."

"Right, come on Adelinda."

"Ok." Mokuba took her hand and they ran out of the alley.

"Look boys, this chick thinks she's so tough. Let's teach her a lesson."

"Yeah."

Mokuba and Adelinda ran across the street and a limo hit the brakes before crashing into them. Seto looked out the window.

"Mokuba?! What are you doing?"

"Seto, help us. These thugs jumped us and now Adelinda's sister is fighting them off alone."

"Please Mr. Kaiba, we have to help her."

Kay grunted as they pushed her into the wall. Her body was sore and she was tired from the fight.

"Heh, did you honestly think you could beat all three of us?" Her head was spinning painfully and her vision was blurring and she blacked out.

...CLIFFIE!

### 9 - The Rare Hunters Mean Buisiness

"......" Kay gave a soft, almost inaudible moan and slowly opened her eyes.

"Mokuba, she's waking up." She blinked and her vision cleared. Adelinda and Mokuba were looking down at her. Kay sat up and felt sore.

"Where...am I?" she managed to ask.

"You're at our mansion!" Mokuba said, smiling at her.

"Your mansion?" she asked. He nodded.

"After you saved me and and Adelinda, we ran out into the street and to our luck, my brother was looking for us too. When we went back to the alley, you were unconscious so my brother rescued you."

"Your brother?"

"Yeah, Seto Kaiba."

"You mean HE saved me?!" Kay snapped.

"You sound angry. I would assume you'd appreciate having someone save your poor life and body from those types of people," a smooth, icy voice said. Kay looked up to see Seto leaning in the doorway, arms cross, trench coat draped over his left arm.

Kay narrowed her eyes a bit. "I don't particularly enjoy playing the part of a damsal in distress, Kaiba." She swung her legs around the side of the bed and stood up. "Anyway, I fear we've worn out our welcome. Come on Adelinda, let's go home."

"Wait, Kay you've been knocked out for two hours. And it's already dark outside. Can't we stay...if it's ok with Mr. Kaiba?" Adelinda asked. Kay looked at her sharply.

"Adelinda," she said firmly, "I said we're going home. Is that understood?" Adelinda gulped nervously and nodded, suddenly very timid.

"Yes ma'am."

"Good. Now come on."

"Bye Mokie."

"Um, bye." Kay pushed past Seto and he snickered. She almost turned back around to demand what he found so funny, but she was in no mood. Now all she wanted to do was get to her apartment, shower,

and go to bed.

Once they were a safe block away, Kay looked at Adelinda.

"I'm sorry I suddenly got so strict, Addy-chan." She looked up at Kay. "I just don't like Kaiba."

"Don't tell me I can't be friends with Mokuba!" Adelinda cried. Kay laughed.

"No, no. I like Mokuba, he seems nice. And I won't let personal prejudices get in the way of your friendships."

Adelinda hugge dher. "Thank you, Kay-Chan." she smiled and pat her on the head.

"No problem, Addy-chan."



Tick...tock...tick...tock...

Kay opened her eyes. She sat up and yawned then looked groggily at her clock.

#### "AAAAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHH!!!"

Adelinda looked up from her cereal to see Kay running into the kitchen, brushing her hair and putting on her jacket.

"Addy! Why didn't you wake me up?!" she cried.

"I thought you needed some sleep."

"Hon, the tournament is still going on today and I need two more locater cards!"

"Oops, sorry sis." Kay chomped down a muffin for breakfast and gulped a glass of milk then quickly brushed her teeth, put her hair in a pull back, put on some make up, clipped on her choker, and put on her duel disk all in fifteen minutes.

"Are you going with Mokuba today?"

"Yeah. He's coming by a little later."

"OK, I'm gonna go." she kissed Adelinda on the temple. "Love you."

"Love you too." Kay ran out of her apartment and across the sidewalk. A limo stopped outside of her apartment and Mokuba watched her run off.

"Wow, she's late."

Kay sped off to Clock Tower Square and stopped to catch her breath.

"Oh...man...I need to...go to a gym or something..." She sighed and sat on a bench, running a hand thorugh her hair.

"Well, well," She looked up and saw a rare hunter. "Lookie at what found."

"Hey, what do you want, punk?" she snapped.

"My prey."

"If you're looking for a duel, I have on right here."

"Very good."

"Well then." She stood up. "It's time to duel, freak." They both drew their hands and gained 4000 lifepoints.

"Duel!"



"Um...e-excuse me?"

Cat, Anzu, Honda, Jounouchi, and Mr. Mouto turned to see agirl with brown eyes, glasses, and brown hair slightly long than Anzu's standing there.

"Can you maybe help me?"

"Um, I guess. What do you need?" Anzu asked.

"Well, you see, my boyfriend, Marik, entered this tournament and I can't seem to find him. He's been missing for quite some time and I'm worried."

"Oh, well, if you want to tag along with us, we'll help you find him."

"Thank you very much."

"No problem." Cat smiled kindly at her. "My name is Cat Tsuru."

"I'm Anzu Mazaki."

"I'm Katsuya Jounouchi."

"I'm Hiroto Honda."

"And I'm Sugoroku Mouto."

"Nice to meet you all. My name is Rin."

"Great to meet you, Rin."



It's been about an hour and no sign of Yugi or Marik. Jounouchi had just defeated Mako Tsunami and now had all six locater cards he needed to get to the finals.

Jounouchi had stopped to call his sister, Shizuka, to tell her he was getting to the finals and he discovered she could take off her bandages. Honda left to go and pick her up.

"Oh no, look!" Anzu cried. They looked up to see a boy carrying Ryou. His arm was cut and bandaged with some cloth. Miho was at their side, looking about ready to cry.

"It's Bakura! And he's hurt!" Anzu cried.

"Marik?" Rin thought. The other boy had sandy blonde hair, tanned skin, and violet eyes.

"Bakura!" Jounouchi said.

"What happened?" Sugoroku asked.

"Is he ok?" Cat asked.

"I just found him lying on the ground," the boy said, gently setting Bakura down.

"He doesn't look so good." Run just stared at them.

"Marik...what is he doing?" She moved into the shadows so Marik could not see her. "Last time I saw him...he was different...did he change back to himself again? Or is it an act?"

"I tried to take care of his injuries." Marik looked up at them. "You know him?" he asked hopefully. "He hasn't said a word since I found him." Jounouchi nodded.

"We're buddies." He leaned down. "Who do you think could have done this?"

"...Jounouchi..." Ryou said. Jounouchi looked at him.

"Bakura! What happened?" Ryou opened his eyes a bit and clutched his wound.

"It happened so quickly...I can't remember..."

"I'm lucky I found you all. He needs to go to a hospital, quickly."

"You're right." Cat nodded.

"Yeah."

"Sounds like Bakura's the lucky one. I'll take him to see a doctor right now." Sugoroku looked at Jounouchi. "Jounouchi, give me a hand."

"Can do."

They called a cab and Jounouchi helped Sugoroku carry Bakura into the back seat and he closed the door.

"There you go."

"He'll be alright. I'll call if there's some news."

"Alright, best of luck." The bab drove off and the gang watched it go. And little did they know, to the worst luck in the world, Yami and Seto were crossing the street nearby and the gang could not see them or be seen by them due to the taxi.

"See you later, Mr. Mouto."

"Feel better, Bakura." The taxi drove off.

Yami was worried. Marik had made threats after he won the duel with his mind slave, Strings, and took his God card, Slifer the Sky Dragon. He threatened to harm his friends.

Seto had only agreed to help him so they could duel and he could defeat Yami with his own Egyptian God Card, Obelisk the Tormentor.

And right now they were on their way to the Aquarium a few blocks away where Jounouchi, Anzu, Cat, Honda, and Sugoroku had just left.

"My friends are in a great deal of danger, Kaiba. I hope you've lead me to the right place."

"Relax, Yugi, your friends are here." They stopped outside of the aquarium.

"Really? How can you be certain?" Yami asked.

"Look, Kaiba Corp's tracking system traced Katsuya Jounouchi's duel disk to these exact coordinates. And it's foolproof." Yami ran off toward the entrance. Seto smirked a little. "Heh. Why Yugi cares about that third rate duelist is beyond me." He looked up, smirking evilly. "Soon he'll have bigger problems."

Seto walked after him.

Jounouchi held up his hand to Marik.

"Hey, thanks a lot...eh...fella." Anzu slightly nudged him out of the way.

"What he means to say is we haven't introduced ourselves."

"I'm Namu, and you are?" He shook Jounouchi's hand.

"The name's Jounouchi."

"I'm Anzu. And this is Cat." Anzu turned and Cat was off in her own world. "Uh, Cat?" She looked up.

"Huh? Oh, sorry about that." she smiled. "It's nice to meet you."

"Hey, where's R-" Anzu started but Cat shrugged before she could finish.

"I don't know. She just seems to have vanished." Marik blinked.

"Who seems to have vanished?"

"One of our friends. She was looking for her booyfriend. I guess she took off."

"Oh."

"Well, thanks for all your help, Namu." Anzu smiled.

"Of course, I just did what anyone would have done."

"Hm? Is that a duel disk on your arm?" Jounouchi asked. Namu blinked and looked at the duel disk he was wearing.

"Uh, yes but I'm afraid I'm not much of a duelist. You're not challenging me to a duel, are you Jounouchi?" he asked.

"I don't hafta duel, 'cause I already qualified for the finals, Namu."

"Wow! Impressive. You must be good. Maybe you could give me some tips one day."

Well, I'll see if I can fit you in."

"Hm. I feel as though I've met you before."

"Yeah, I know what you mean. Smell ya later, Namu." Anzu, Jounouchi, ad Cat turned and walked away.

"Nice meeting you three!" Marik said.

"He seems like a nice enough guy."

"Totally." Cat didn't say anything.

"I wonder where Rin got off to...it doesn't seem like her to just leave..." Cat thought. "I know I just met her, but still...and I don't know if I trust this Namu guy..."

"Hey Cat?"

"Huh?" She looked at Jounouchi.

"How come you're so quiet?"

"Oh, it's nothing, really." She smiled. "I swear, I'm fine."

"You haven't said anything much."

"Don't worry, guys. I guess I'm worried about Bakura."

"Yeah, me too. But I'm sure he'll be fine." Anzu nodded.

"Yeah. Try to think positively."

"You're right. Thanks, guys."

"Hey! Wait up! Jounouchi! Anzu! Cat!" Marik ran up to them and they stopped and turned to look at him.

"What's up?" Jounouchi asked.

"I don't mean to be an inconvienience, but can you give me a few dueling tips right now?"

"Sure, I could hit you with a few pointers." Rin, who was still watching them, frowned a bit.

"Thanks, I'd like to win at least one duel in Battle City."

"Something isn't right..."

"You've come to the right place, Namu. I got so many dueling secrets, it'll make your head spin." Cat and Anzu smiled. Same old Jounouchi. "Just stick with me, Namu. You'll be a dueling expert in no time."

"Wait, Jounouchi, look behind you." Cat and Anzu gasped as a Rare Hunter grabbed Marik's shoulders. Jounouchi dealt with the one behind him.

"Take this!"

"They got him!" Anzu exclaimed.

"Piece of cake."

"AHHH!" A rare hunter grabbed Anzu.

"Anzu!" Cat exclaimed.

"Hey, let go of her, ya creep!" Jounouchi demanded. Cat shrieked as another one grabbed her.

"Look, what do you want?" Anzu asked. Jounouchi growled.

"You're real tough, why don't cha pick on me?" he asked. The two rare hunters he punched stood back up.

"Jounouchi, behind you!" Anzu warned.

"Look out!" Cat cried. But her warning came too late.

"You fool!" Jounouchi fell back as he was punched. Anzu and Cat gasped.

"Are you alright? Jounouchi!" Anzu cried.

"I've been better..." The rare hunter tightened his grip on Anzu and her cell phone started to ring.

"Oh!"

"Expecting someone?" one of them asked. Another one looked through her purse and pulled out her phone.

"I'll take that."

"Get off of my stuff!" she demanded.

"Yeah!" Cat snapped.

"Be quiet," the hunter holding her demanded roughly.

"You heard her, lay off!" Jounouchi added. The rare hunter answered the phone and, unknowingly, put it on speaker.

"Hello, Anzu, are you there? Hello?" Yami's voice asked.

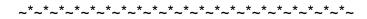
"Yugi help!" she cried.

"Anzu! Where are you? Anz-" The rare hunter dropped the phone and stepped on it.

"No!"

"You're gonna pay for that!" Jounouchi snapped.

"Looks like your friend won't find you now."



Meanwhile, with Seto and Yami, Seto just recieved a call.

"Hm?"

Mokuba and Adelinda were sitting on the roof of a skyscraper. Mokuba was on his laptop.

"Seto, come in!"

"What is it, Mokuba?" he asked.

"We have a problem! Katsuya Jounouchi's duel disk isn't sending a signal to the satellite system. I tihnk something's blocking it. I'll go back to headquarters and make sure the team starts working on the tracking problem right away."

"Do it."

"Alright. We'll find those guys, Seto. I promise!"

"When you do, let me know." Seto broke the connection. Adelinda sighed.

"Man...these Rare Hunters aren't kidding around." Mokuba looked at her.

"Hey, don't worry Adelinda. My brother and I will find those wackos, jsut you wait."

"Ah, yeah." She smiled. "I know you can do it, Mokie." He grinned sheepishly and blushed a little. Mokuba closed his briefcase with his laptop and stood up.

"There he is!" Some rare hunters stood ehind the two and laughed evilly.

"Hey, who are you?" Mokuba demanded. The rare hunters jumped down and Mokuba and Adelinda backed away.

They tried to run off, but got blocked off.

"You're not going anywhere!" Odion hit Mokuba and he flew back, dropping his briefcase.

"What's the rush?"

"Mokuba!" Adelinda shrieked. "Hey, who's the girl?" one asked. She looked up, fear in her eyes. "Let's take her too." "Yeah." They grabbed her and she screamed. "Hey...let go of her, you creeps!" Mokuba yelled. "Heh, you're ours, now." He looked up at Odion's cold, yellow eyes. "Leave me alone! You're one of those rare hunters, aren't you?" "Perhaps I am, and today you're my prey." They laughed evilly. ~\*~\*~\*~\*~\*~\*~\*~\*~\*~\*~\*~ Kay walked down the sidewalk, grinning. "Battle City finals, here I come!" Her cell phone rang and she picked up. "Hello?" "Hi Kay." Her eyes widened at the voice. "Uncle! You're alright!" she cried happily. "Yup, I'm better than ever." "Oh thank God. I was so worried. What happened to you?" "I don't quite remember. But I know someone stole my millennium eye after I lost to Yugi Mouto." "Was it Yugi?" "I don't think so." "Are you sure?" "Yeah." "...I have to go, I'll call you tonight, ok?"

"Alright, bye." She smiled and hung up. "I have an apology to make. Better go find Yugi." She ran off.

Soon, she was at the pier.

"Hm...I wonder where I can find Yugi." She screamed when someone grabbed her from behind.

"Lookie here, an intruder."

"Let's lock her up with the others."

"Rare hunters!" Kay growled. "Let go of me."

"Sorry, love. Can't do that." They dragged her to a room filled with cardboard boxes and threw her in.

"Enjoy your stay."

"YOU CREEPS!" she yelled.

"Kay-chan?"

"Huh?" she looked up to see Adelinda. "Adelinda?!"

"Kay!" Adelinda ran and hugged her. Kay looked to see Mokuba, Anzu, and Mokuba also there.

"Those creeps grabbed all of you too?" she asked.

"Yeah..."

"We need to get out of here."

"But how?" Mokuba asked. "They took my laptop so I can't call Seto for help."

"Can't we climb up those boxes?" Kay asked.

"I tried that once, but it didn't work."

"Well, when at first you don't succeed, try, try again."

"Hm..."

"Look, Anzu, I know oyu don't like me. But if we want to get out of here, you have to trust me."

"Kay's right, Anzu." Anzu looked at Cat and Kay then nodded.

"You're right." They stacked up the boxes.

"Ok, let's get out in this order. First Adelinda, then Mokuba, then Cat, then Anzu, and finally me. Sound

good?"

"Yeah!" everyone agreed.

"Ok." Adelinda and Mokuba successfully climbed out the window and Cat was starting to get out when the door opened.

"Hey!" Kay looked at the rare hunters and gasped.

"Hurry, Cat!"

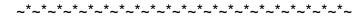
"I'm trying!" Adelind anad Mokuba were barely able to pull her out before the boxes collapsed, bringing Kay nad Anzu with them.

"Kay! Anzu!" they yelled. Both girls groaned in pain.

"Get some help!" Anzu cried.

"Yeah!"

"Right!"



Anzu and Kay were being lead down the hall and Kay counted in her head.

"NOW!" She racked the guy who was leading her and her immediately released her. Anzu didn't get the chance to do the same because she was trapped. "Anzu!" Kay said.

"Get out of here, Kay!" Anzu cried.

"But-"

"Please! Go and find Yugi."

"Ah, ok. I promise, I'll be back." She ran out of the building and shrieked as she was chased by at least ten rare hunters. "OK! Maybe I should have thought this through a bit more...AHHHHHHHHHHH!" She picked up the speed and continued running.

# 10 - Wait, you're a WHAT?!

"We have to find my friends and your brother right now."

"Hmph." Seto turned away from Yami. "I'm well aware of that, Yugi." The two were on the top of a skyscraper and had just defeated two of Marik's rare hunters; Lumis and Umbra. But there was still no sign of Mokuba or any of Yugi's friends and it was troubling.

"Then help me think of a plan. Every second counts." They heard a noise that quickly grew louder.

"Hm?" Seto looked up. A helicopter flew up into their view. They both stared. (like a couple of slackjawed idiots. Forgive me, couldn't resist. XP They did look kinda stupid at that part)

Mokuba stepped to the open door and held on.

"It's me, Seto!" he cried. (No duh! Sorry, I love making fun of the show. XD So fun. The dubbed version is really retarded)

"It's Mokuba!" (I repeat, no duh!) "He escaped!" Seto creid, running to the helicpoter which was landing on the skyscraper. (And thank you Captain Obvious. Ok, I'm done. So sorry, but this is one of the parts I love to mock the most)

Mokuba jumped out, followed by Adelinda and Cat, and they ran over to Yami and Seto.

"Cat!" Yami exclaimed. They ran up to each other.

"Tell me, are you two alright?" Seto asked Mokuba and Adelinda. (I'm gonna use my imagination and pretend he cares) Mokuba nodded.

"Mmm-hmm."

Yami looked at Cat. "Are you OK?" he asked her She blushed lightly.

"Oh, yeah. I'm doing ok. Thanks." She smiled sheepishly.

"But we had to leave Anzu and Kay behind." This caught Yami's attention again. Adelinda bit her lip worriedly and Cat hugged her comfortingly.

"Are they ok? And what about Jounouchi? And Honda?"

"Well, I'm not so sure about Jounouchi or Honda, but up until Kay and Anzu helped us escape from the rare hunters, they were doing alright. We gotta go back there."

"Please, Mr. Yugi!" Adelinda added. "I'm worried about my sister."

"Get in the chopper now!" They all looked at Seto in surprise. "Sounds like YOUR friend Anzu and your sister saved Mokuba's life. And as much as I hate getting involved, I hate owing someone a favor even more."

"Thank you." Adelinda sighed with relief.

They flew up and Mokuba operated his laptop. Seto sat in the middle of Yami and Mokuba, Cat and Adelinda sat across from them and there was one empty seat. (Again, using imagination here)

"Is our satellite tracking system working?" Seto asked Mokuba.

"Yes! I'm picking up a weak signal from Jounouchi's duel disk. It's coming from the same spot where those rare hunters were keeping us. We should be there in about fifteen minutes."

They heard a weak scream.

"Huh?" most of them said.

"what was that?" Mokuba asked. Adelinda looked out the window.

"AIYAH!!! Mein schwester!!!' she cried. sure enough, Kay was below them, running from the rare hunters.

"Seto, we have to help her! She was the one who got us out of there." Seto growled.

Kay was growing tired and they were starting to gain on her.

"Oh no, what do I do?!" she thought desperately. "I can't keep running much longer." The wind around her began to pick up and the chopped was soon close to her. "What the?"

Adelinda and Mokuba looked out.

"Kay-Chan!" Adelinda cried.

"Adelinda?!"

"Grab our hands!" Mokuba yelled. They got close enough and she was able to jump up and take their hands. But the two weren't strong enough to pull her in. Yami and Cat tried to help, but her hand slipped from theirs.

"KAY!!!" Adelinda cried. She gasped as she felt herself start to fall from midair, but a warm hand roughly snatched her wrist. She looked up to see...SETO?!

He was somehow able to pull her up into the chopper.

"How many times do I have to save you?!" he snapped. She glared.

"I'm not exactly asking you to."

"Fine, next time I'll let you fall and crack your head open." They glared daggers at each other, but only for a moment, because Kay was glomped by Mokuba and Adelinda.

"Thank God you're ok!!" they both cried. She smiled and hugged them back.

"Yeah, thanks for coming. I would've been caught for sure if you hadn't helped me out." she sighed and looked at Seto. "And...thanks...for saving me..." she managed to mumble.

"Whatever."

"Even when you're nice to him, he's a cocky, arrogant b-" She stopped there. "B-beesting in the eye?" she offered.

"nice save."

"Thanks. Cat."

"Sure tihng." Seto rolled his eyes and everyone took their seats.

Kay sat in between Cat and Adelionda. I dunno if you all care, but I'm adding this in for extra detail. Kay sat across from Seto, Cat sat across from Yami, and Adelinda across from Mokuba.

Mokuba looked at his laptop. It'as been a few minutes. "The rare hunters' hideout...we're just about eleven miles away. I know exactly where those creeps are keeping Anzu, and Jounouchi should be near by. We'll get them both out of there in no time."

"Wait, hold up. Anzu isn't being held captive in the same place anymore."

"What?" Yami asked. Kay looked guilty. "You see...right after Cat, Mokuba, and Adelinda were able to escape, we were dragged out of the storgae room they locked us in. I racked the guy who had a hold of me and got away, but Anzu couldn't. She told me to find you but now I don't know where they took her. Sorry, Yugi..."

He sighed heavily. "It's not your fault, Kay."

"Well, they should still be near-by. There's no way they're traveling faster than we are, so we'll find them."

"I hope you're right, Mokuba."

"I'm concerned with more important issues," Everyone looked at Seto.

"Great, here we go..." Kay thought.

"Like finding the third Egyptian God Card."

"Egyptian God Cards?" Kay thought. "That kind of rings a bell..." Suddenly, she remembered her uncle telling her of three powerful titans that rampaged Ancient Egypt and held power beyond belief and were considered creatures of the Gods. Slifer the Sky Dragon, Obelisk the Tormentor, and the Winged Dragon of Ra. She recalled how Pegasus told her the Gods overwhelmed him, but he went into no further detail than that.

She knew he had given the three cards he produced of the gods to a woman for hiding. But that's all she remembered.

"Could Kaiba actually have one of those God cards?" she wondered, frowning.

"Tell me, Yugi, who exactly is this Marik? He leads the Rare Hunters, but what else do you know about him?"

"Well I've never actually seen his face, but I know that he possessed a millennium item much like my own millennium puzzle." Cat looked up at this, worry in her face. Kay's face remained emotionless, but her mind was racing with thoughts, trying to make connections.

"Hmph, those again?" Seto asked. "Spare me the bogus magic talk, Yugi."

"Kaiba, you have already experienced the great power of a millennium item first hand. Or have you forgotten about Pegasus and his millennium eye?" Kay immediately looked up sharply at the mention of her uncle.

"That was just a cheap trick." Mokuba looked at Seto.

"But Seto, Pegasus DID use his millennium eye to trap us."

"That's enough, just drop it, Mokuba."

"I beg your pardon?" Kay asked coldly. Yami looked up at her.

"That's right, Pegasus never did let you in on what specifically happened during duelist kingdom, did he Kay?"

"Hmph...the only reason I'm even talking to you or trying to help is because my uncle called me today and told me he's alright."

"Well, I can assure you I did not put him into a coma, but I'm glad to hear he is OK."

"Now what were you carrying on about? Magic or whatever?"

"Your uncle possessed a millennium item like my puzzle. And he used it to trap the souls of Mokuba, Kaiba, and my grandfather into the shadow realm."

"WHAT?! You've got to be kidding me!"

"Don't listen to him." She looked at Seto. "Yugi and his friends have lost their minds. They still believe magic and fairy tales exist. Even though you are annoying and I think your uncle is nuts, I don't see much point in Yugi stealing your sanity." She glared at Seto.

"Gee, how sweet of you..." she muttered icily.

"Whatever, it's all a bunch of cheap tricks." Yami sighed.

"You can believe whatever you choose, but I assure you my puzzle is no trick. And Kay, I am not lying to you. Pegasus did use his millennium item, however he had good intentions behind it. He did it to revive his wife."

"A-Aunt Cecelia?" she said. Yami nodded.

"Yes." Her face fell.

"That's right...she died when I was just a little girl...Adelinda never got to meet her..." She sighed. "Poor Uncle...I forget how lonely he is."

"OK, enough pity over Pegasus, that nutcase doesn't deserve it." Kay looked up at Seto, anger flashing in her eyes.

"WILL YOU SHUT UP?! If you don't care, then keep your big mouth shut, you idiot! Just because you HAVE no heart-"

"WHO ARE YOU TO JUDGE ME?"

"I COULD ASK YOU THE SAME THING!"

"Guys!" Mokuba cried desperately. "Please don't fight." They sank back into their chairs, arms crossed and scowls on their faces.

"Fine!" they both snapped.

"They're like little kids!" Adelinda whispered to Mokuba.

"I know." Yami shook his head.

"Well, continuing with what I was saying. My puzzle is not a trick. And I'm not exactly who you tihnk I am, Kaiba."

"Hm?" Seto looked at him.

"I am actually a 3,000-year-old spirit who lives within the chambers of the millennium puzzle." Everyone's jaws dropped, except for Cat's.

"That's a lie!" Seto said. "Do you honestly expect me to believe you?"

"It's true, Kaiba. At one time I lived in Egypt. It was there I ruled as pharaoh."

"Say WHAT?!" Adelinda and Kay exclaimed in unison.

"As...pharaoh?!" Seto said.

"No way!" Mokuba added. The expressions on the Kaiba brothers was completely identical. You could totally see the relation between the two.

"But it can't be."

"Cat, did you know this?" Kay asked, looking at Cat who seemed unfazed by all of this.

"Well...yeah..."

"Your pharaoh story's not true." They looked at Seto. "There's no way! That woman Ishizu told me the same lie at the museum. He chuckled evilly. "you? Pharaoh? What a joke. I spoke to that crazy woman also, Yugi, but unlike you, I didn't buy into her story."

"Stubborn as usual..." Kay muttered.

"Look, what Ishizu said is true. I know it...I know who I must stop. And I'll never forget the day I first heard his name."

"Were you there for this too, Cat?"

"Yes. It was duel against a rare hunter with Exodia."

"Wooooow...that's tough."

"Yup. But he won. He found Exodia's weak point."

"Really?! That's incredible." Cat nodded. "The only way I can think to beat Exodia is maybe Card Destruction or something like that."

"He used Chain Destruction."

"Hey, I was close." Cat giggled.

"So let me get this straight, Marik wants to rule the world?" Mokuba asked. (He sounded so adorable

at that part... ^^ I love that kid, he's so damn cute.) "and he thinks getting all three Egpytian God Cards will give him to power to do it? Guess that explains why he's going through all this trouble just to get his hands on them."

"That's ridiculous, Mokuba." Kay sighed.

"And here we go."

"Yugi, do me a favor and stop corrupting my borther's mind with your lies."

"They're not lies! And you've heard Marik's plan first hand, remember?"

"Were you there at this part, Cat?" Kay asked.

"I don't think so."

"Ok. So I'm not the only one in the dark at this point?"

"Heh, I guess you can say that."

"Hm, using magic powers to control people's minds. I'll bet you still believe in the tooth fairy as well." (LOL, XD. I love that line. All hail Seto and his sexy, gravity defying trench coat along with his sarcasm)

"Marik's powers are very real and very dangerous. And now that he's captured my friends, there's no telling what he plans to do with them." Yami clenched his fist. "We have to locate my friends and get them away from that madman as soon as possible...before it's too late!"

"We're only two miles from our target, guys."

"Good. Then it won't be long before we find Anzu and Jounouchi."

"I'm tired of hearing about your friends, Yugi."

"Because you don't have any." He ignored Kay's comment.

"Especially that hack, Jounouchi."

"Jounouchi has become an extremely skilled duelist, Kaiba, In fact, I wouldn't be surprised if he had already qualified to the Battle City finals."

"jounouchi?" Kay whispered to Cat. "Is that the annoying blonde one?"

"Yeah." ^^;

"Hmm...he was weird. And he didn't look like much of a duelist."

"He's actually really good."

"I heard his deck is based off luck. Or was that a nasty rumor?"

"Well..."

"Ah, so I'm right?"

"Kind of....his deck does kind of depend on luck..."

"Mmm-hmm." Kay sat back. "Not a very stable strategy, but that's just my opinion."

"What's your deck based off?" Cat asked. Kay smiled and winked.

"That's a secret. But come the Battle City finals, I'll show off the secret powers my deck holds."

"Yeah!" Adelinda said. They both grinned.

"Not to worry my friends, I promise I will set you free."

"Wow, I forgot about Yugi for a moment."

"Look, the Rare Hunters' hideout." They all looked out the windows. "It's just up ahead!"

"Begin our descent. Immediately."

"Yes Mr. Kaiba."

"Does he even know the word please?" Kay asked Adelinda, who grinned a little and shrugged.

WHEE! This took so long to write because the episode I got the lines from was FULL of friggin flashbacks. It was SO annoying. Sorry for my constant author notes, but it's jsut so fun to comment.

## 11 - The Deadliest Duel pt. 1

They approached the pier. Kay looked out the window and sighed, hoping Anzu was ok. She felt guilty for leaving her behind. Cat looked at her.

"Kay?"

"Huh?"

"Are yu alright?"

"oh, I'm fine. Just...thinking." Cat put a hand on her shoulder.

"I'm worried about them too." Kay sighed and nodded. Seto watched the two and rolled his eyes a bit.

"Girls have to make everything seem like a soap opera..." he thought.

Yami was in his own little world. He started talking. To whom, I have no idea. "As soon as we land, Mokuba will lead us to my friends. We'll break in, and get them out." Kay and Cat looked up at him.

"Who's he talking to?" Kay whispered. Cat shrugged.

"Look Yugi, I brought you here and I'll be calling all the shots today." Cat, Kay, and Adelinda all automatically groaned.

"And here we go."

"And the first task on my agenda is to track down the third Egpytian God Card. After that, we'll find your friends."

"Yugi is going to explode in three, two, one..."

"Kaiba! Jounouchi and Anzu are in great danger and we must rescue them right away!"

"Jounouchi playing a damsal in distress, why am I not surprised?" Kay joked, trying to kinda lighten the mood between herself and Adelinda, who both giggled a bit.

"Sorry, but it's obvious that you and I have very different priorities, Yugi. So why don't we split up and fend for ourselves when we land?" Yami narrowed his eyes at Seto.

"That's foolish."

"I have to agree." Seto ignored Cat's comment. Apparently, to him, the three girls across from them has ceased to exist after turning the situation into a "soap opera."

"Maybe it is to you, but I've always worked better on my own. Haven't you realized by now the teamwork's not my thing?"

"Can anyone say emo?" Cat asked. Adelinda and Kay laughed a bit and bit their lips at the slight glare Mokuba offered them, but kept grinning.

"When we battled against Lumis and Umbra in that double duel, it was me who defeated them..and without much help. So do me a favor and stay out of my way, Yugi, because we're finished. I brought you here, now you can take care of the rest by yourself."

"...Kaiba did you just break up with Yugi?" Kay asked.

"I didn't know they were dating." Kay laughed at Adelinda's remark and Seto wasted no time glaring at both of them before continuing.

"I've done enough charity work already. Sorry, I'm through." Kay, Cat, and Adelinda all sighed in unison.

"Is it me, or is Kaiba's attitude getting old fast?" Kay murmured, massaging her temples.

"Don't worry, Yugi, we'll help." Cat smiled reassuringly at him. He sighed and nodded.

"Thank you, Cat." Imagine the over exagerrated anime tears running down Kay's face.

"Oh! What a touching moment! Young love is so beautiful!!" Cat and Yami promptly turned red.

"What?! No!!" they cried, waving their hands. Kay crossed her arms and smirked evilly.

"Ya sure? You two sure seem like a couple to me." Mokuba nodded.

"Yeah."

"Stay out of this, Mokuba!" Cat cried, her face as red as a cherry. Kay giggled a bit, greatly enjoying the reactions for both teens. Seto smirked.

"Look, the great King of Games is blushing over something so dumb."

"Quiet, Kaiba!" Yami snapped, his blush only growing deeper. To Cat and Yami's relief, they heard the pilot through a speaker.

"We're approaching our target now, Mr. Kaiba." mokuba pressed his nose to the window.

"Hey guys, I think I see someone on the pier. And is kind of looks like...Jounouchi."

"Say what?" Kay, Cat, and Adelinda all squished together to look out the window too.

Yami stared in shock. "It is Jounochi! And he seems to be all alone."

"What's he doing down there? Did he escape?" Cat asked.

"If so, why would he just be standing there?" Mokuba asked.

"Maybe he saw the chopper?" Adelinda suggested. Kay frowned and kept silent. She didn't trust this little coincidence in the least. Yami looked at Seto.

"Kaiba, we may be heading into a trap."

"Yugi please, I've heard enough out of you for one day." The helicopter landed and Yami stepped out, followed closely by the rest.

"Welcome!" Jounouchi said, smirking cruelly. Kay looked and automatically saw his eyes were blank.

"That's not Jounouchi..." she thought. "That mutt has never had such emotionless eyes. Besides, his voice is messed up. But...who is he? And what happened to the real Jounouchi?"

"Jounouchi!" Yami exclaimed. Kay looked at him.

"Yugi..."

"Not exactly." She turned her attention back to Jounouchi. "Katsuya is not present; he's gone away."

"What?!"

"It's Marik!"

"That's correct, and if you want your friends back, you will listen to me."

"What's going on?" Mokuba asked. "That sure doesn't sound like Jounouchi." Adelinda looked up at Kay.

"Yeah."

"It must be one of Marik's tricks."

"I have a feeling it's much more than that..." Kay said, mostly to herself.

"Listen, Jounouchi! You've got to be in there!"

"It's pointless. Now, you listen, Yugi. We are playing by my regulations. I'll release your pathetic friends as soon as I get what I want. Of course, since I want your puzzle and Egyptian God Card, there's only one way to do this-" He held up an arm with a duel disk on it. "You and I are going to duel!"

"Oh no..." Cat whispered. "Marik must have more to it than this..." Kay nodded.

"My thoughts exactly."

"You're insane!" Yami cried.

"Refuse, and your friends are mine forever!"

"Release Jounoiuchi from your control, Marik!"

"What's going on, bro?" Mokuba asked.

"Well Mokuba, it appears that this Marik was somehow able to turn Katsuya Jounouchi against Yugi. Now Jounouchi wants to duel. This should be interesting, to say the very least."

"Interesting?" Mokuba asked, looking up at him in confusion. Kay looked sharply in Seto's direction. "But why?"

"Well, if Jounouchi is fighting on the side of Marik and the rare hunters now, he may be holding the third Egyptian God Card." Kay stomped her foot.

"Oh! Is that all you can even think about? A stupid card?" she snapped. "This Marik freak is clearly dangerous and somebody could get hurt! But all you care about is a stupid little card that anyone could just rip up and it'd be gone!" Kay yelled.

"What would you know?" he asked. "You're hardly a step above the mutt over there and not even close to my league." imagine a volcano exploding. Now take that explosion, mulitply it by about ten, that's approximately how pissed Kay is growing to be at this instant.

"EXCUSE ME?! I could duel circles around a creep like you! I've designed over half of the cards in duel monsters, INCLUDING the three Blue Eyes White Dragons in your deck! If I demanded it, Industrial Illusions could take those cards back and I could burn them!"

Seto narrowed his eyes. "You wouldn't dare. You're all talk and no action."

"Do you remember the night I slapped you? Well, take that slap, double the impact, and imagine it targeting your crotch. Keep talking like this and that's EXACTLY what is going to happen, rich-boy!"

Cat grabbed her shoulders.

"K-Kay-chan, calm down..."

"No! I'm sick of this guy. All he thinks about is himself and three stupid cards! It makes me sick."

"You know nothing about me, so you're not one to judge."

"HELLO HYPOCRITE, you've judged me SINCE DAY ONE!"

"And all of my assumptions are correct: you're a weak, worthless duelist who comes from a worthless family and thinks she is so tough when the only thing she has is a big mouth and the need for anger

management." Ok, now imagine the sun exploding and multiply that by...two. Yup, that's how mad she is.

Kay charged at him and aimed a kick *there*, but Seto saw her coming and quickly moved aside, only to get elbowed by her quick reflex. He growled a quickly restrained her.

"Damn it, why don't you just back down?"

"Not until you take back what you just said! I am not one who takes insults lightly, you creep!" she snarled. And now let's focus on what the hell is going on in the meantime. Yami and Jounouchi had ignored this entire episode.

"Jounouchi, I know you can hear me. Your mind is under the conrol of Marik and you must break free, understand? The same Marik you vowed to help me crush. Think Jounouchi, you've got to remember your promise to me. When you gave me your Red Eyes."

"Wow...he's really determined..." Kay noticed Seto still had a hold and she thrashed. "Let me go!" He blinked and did so. She dusted off her jacket, glaring at him.

"Marik couldn't defeat me in a duel, so he decided to turn you against me in order to win my puzzle and Egyptian God Card. Jounouchi...I know you're in there and I'm going to set you free."

"Yeah!" Cat exclaimed. "You can do it, Yugi." Kay nodded.

"That's right."

"Go Yugi!" Adelinda cheered.

"Marik's power is feeble compared to the strength of our friendship. Please, say something Jounouchi...Jounouchi!"

"Jounouchi" leaned forward a bit, his smirk growing more malicious.

"You're never set him free, unless you follow me, Yugi." Yami gasped. as Jounouchi started to walk away.

"Jounouchi, wait!" Yami froze, trying to decide what to do.

"Yugi, you'd better do extactly as I say. They looked to their right to see Anzu walking down some stairs from a large cruise.

"Anzu?!" Kay exclaimed. "Her eyes...they're blank just like Jounouchi's. Oh no, don't tell me Marik's brainwashed her too!"

"No, Anzu!" Yami said. Cat's eyes widened a bit.

"This is bad..." Cat whispered.

This may come as an unpleasent surprise, but like your friend Jounouchi, Anzu too is under my control." She laughed evilly. "Surprised?"

"Marik! Leave her alone now! She has done nothing to you."

"Ha, looks like I've turned your closest friends into your greatest enemies. You're at my mercy."

"Anzu!" Yami ran after her.

"Yugi!"

"C'mon." They ran after him. Soon enough, they came to the set battle arena. There was an anchor hanging over a square hole in the pier that was filled with ocean water. Jounouchi stood to the left of the anchor.

"Welcome to my very special dueling arena."

"I've got a bad feeling about this..." Kay said. "That anchor looks ready to drag someone into that water."

"You're right."

"Look around you, should you accept battling against your best friend in a duel like none you've ever experienced for the hightest stakes imaginable."

"This is nuts!"

"Alright, let's duel if it means saving my friends." Anzu held up chains.

"Let's begin. Why don't you both try these on for size?" in no time at all, Jounouchi and Yami were both chained up. "Notice that you're both securely fastened to a chain that leads to a large anchor hanging about you. Thirty seconds after a palyer's lifepoints reach zero, the anchor will drop to the bottom of the sea!"

"That's right," Jounouchi said, "now look down." Yami did so and saw a box. "That small yellow box is your lifepoint counter, but it also contains the key to your survival. When one player's lifepoints reach zero, the other player's box opens, revealing a key that unlocks his shackles. Remember, you'll have thirty seconds to free yourself before the anchor drops."

"So the loser of this duel will be dragged to the bottom of the ocean? While the winner frees himself at the last minute?" Yami asked.

"That's right. Quite ingenius, isn't it?" He chuckled evilly.

"Yugi, you can't do this!" Cat cried.

"I doubt we can talk him out of this, Cat. But my question is, how can Yugi and Jounouchi both make it

out of this duel in one piece?" Kay asked. Cat's eyes widened a bit. Kay frowned. "Either way, it seems Yugi will lose no matter whose lifepoints hit zero. If he defeats Jounouchi, he may get to keep his puzzle, but Jounouchi will be dragged down and he'll drown. However, if Yugi decides to lose to save Jounouchi or is actually beaten, he is dragged down and loses his god card and his millennium puzzle, if I'm thinking correctly."

Jounouchi smirked at Kay. "You're pretty smart. Yes, that's it exactly. so no matter what you do, Yugi, you can't win."

"But wait, if I win this duel will you set my friends free from your control, Marik?"

"You'll have to fish Jounouchi out of the sea first. And don't think I left little Anzu out of all the fun."

"Anzu!" They looked to see her sitting in a chair and they watched as some type of bind appear, strapping in her hands and feet.

"But I'll get to her rules shortly. And just in case you had any plans refusing to duel, think again. If there's no winner within sixty seconds, the anchor will automatically drop, sending both of you plummeting into the sea."

"What?! But if that happens-"

"Marik wins it all." Cat stared.

"We have to do something."

"I know, I know. But what?" Kay asked. "From where we're standing, there doesn't appear to be much that we can do."

"But you will lose, Yugi." They looked at Anzu again. "And before that anchor drops, I'll take your millennium puzzle and your Egyptian God Card."

"You're not going to get away with any of this, Marik!"

"Ha! And Seto Kaiba, don't think you're merely a spectator in all of this. As soon as I'm through with little Yugi and his friends, I'm setting my sights on YOUR Egyptian God Card; Obelisk the Tormentor."

"Alright, I've heard enough!" Mokuba said to Seto, clenching his fist a bit. "This duel is getting way out of hand, Seto. You've gotta put a stop to it before someone gets hurt!"

"Yeah!" Adelinda said.

"Plus, Marik may try something like this on us next."

"WE might be useless, but Kaiba sure isn't. So why don't you prove you have a heart, richboy." Kay crossed her arms. "Or at least a brain." Seto growled a bit.

"As head of the Battle City tournament, I demand that this duel be stopped now!"

"Sorry," Anzu said as a crane drove over, carrying a large, metal crate drove over to her until the crate was dangling above her, "but the duel will continued as planned. And speaking of plans, here's the final piece of my plot."

"What?"

"Hey, what's that? Above Anzu!" Mokuba asked.

"Oh my God...no way he would stoop this low..." Kay said. Yami turned and looked.

"Anzu! What is the meaning of this, Marik?"

"I'm afraid that anchor won't be the only thing getting dropped. I've taken extra measures to make sure no one interferes, so don't try. If you attempt to stop this duel, the crate you see hanging over my head will fall. You wouldn't put poor Anzu in danger, would you?"

"MARIK YOU FREAK!" Kay screeched.

"Careful what you say to me, Kay. I control this entire duel. In fact, if you hadn't escaped, you'd probably be the one sitting in Anzu's chair, that or ready to drink poison."

"You're sick." "Anzu" laughed evilly.

"Make one falso move and I release the crate hanging above the girl's head!" the rare hunter in the crane said, holding up a remote. Seto backed up half a step.

"I can't stop this duel..."

"Now that everything seems to be in place and everyone is familiar with all the rules, why don't we start the show? Oh wait, I almost forgot. I wouldn't want little Anzu to miss all of this." Her eyes returned to normal and she moaned and her head drooped.

"Anzu!" Yami yelled.

"Is she ok?" Cat asked. She slowly looked up and opened her eyes.

"Where am I? What's going on?" she asked. She tried to move but discovered the binds on the chair. "Hey! I'm trapped!"

"Now then, there's one last matter. Yugi! Your Egyptian God Card is off-limits. So if you were planning on using it against me, you're out of luck. Now remove the card from your deck so I may claim it when I win." Yami unbuckled his belt containing the case that held his cards.

"As you wish, Marik." He held up the belt. "I keep my special cards in here." (**That sounded sorta...weird**) He pulled out Slifer and added the Red Eyes Black Dragon to his deck, remembering how

much it meant to Jounouchi and how it may trigger some of his memories.

"Now place Slifer on the ground, Yugi." He tossed the belt aside rather carelessly. "So whoever wins will retrieve that card while the loser goes swimming." He listed the arm with the duel disk a bit, ready to activate it. "I think it's finally time to begin this duel."

"Yugi?" Anzu asked. "Verse Jounouchi?"

"Are you ready to duel, Yugi?"

"I am. Let's do this."

"Prepare to lose, fool."

"It's time to duel!" They both gained 4000 lifepoints.

## 12 - The Deadliest Duel pt. 2

Jounochi smirked evilly. "Yugi, you draw the first card. It's the beginning of the end for you." Yami stood there for a moment. "What's the problem, Yugi? Are you too frightened to play a card?"

"I don't think so, Marik. I summon Gazelle: the kind of Mythical Beasts." The beast appeared on the field. "That ends my turn."

"Very well." Jounouchi drew a card. "Yugi, say goodbye to your Gazelle, for I play Raikegi which destorys it!"

Yami gasped as a bolt of lightening struck his monster and it shattered. Everyone watching gasped.

"Aw no...Yugi's wide open!" Cat cried.

"Now I summon Aligator Sword. Attack his life points directly!"

"Yugi!" Cat cried.

"That thing is strong enough to wipe out almost half his lifepoints!" Kay said. Yami grunted as his lifepoints dropped to 2500.

"Ha-ha-ha-ha. Surrender yet? Or do you want more? I hope you're not going easy on me because we're old friends, Yugi. You'll be sorry..." Jounouchi said, smiling wickedly. Yami straightened and drew a card.

"We're not friends, Marik." His voice was cold as ice and so were his eyes. "I play Big Shield Gardna, right now, in defense mode."

"Ah, good. That means Yugi's lifepoints are safe." Cat beamed. Kay frowned.

"Don't count your chickens before they hatch, Cat." She looked at Kay in confusion. "Jounouchi took out Yugi's Gazelle without even trying. Magic cards like Raikegi are extremely rare and powerful. And if he has a card like that and is working for these rare hunters, he must have an arsenal of rare magic cards just waiting to shatter Yugi's defense."

Seto nodded. "She's right. That Big Shield is not much of a threat if you have the right moves. But with a third-rate duelist like Jounouchi, we should not be too worried."

"Like I said, if he's working for the rare hunters, Lord knows what cards are in that deck." Kay frowned. "We'll just have to wait and see."

"So, you tihnk that's enough to protect your lifepoints, Yugi?" Jounouchi asked. "So naiive." He held up a card. "I play my Hinotama magic card."

Kay and Seto's eyes widened.

"No way!"

"Yugi's in trouble!"

"Now watch closely: AS ITS POWER BLASTS AWAY YOUR LIFEPOINTS!"

"YUGI!" Anzu cried.

Cat's eyes widened and she clasped her hands over her mouth in shock. Kay winced a bit as the fireballs hits Yami, Adelinda covered her eyes and Mokuba hugged her and looked away.

Yami's lifepoints fell to 2000. Seto frowned.

"That third-rate duelist Jounouchi never had cards that powerful in his deck! So he is being helped..."

"And with half of Yugi's lifepoints gone after only two turns, I fear the worst is yet to come." Cat took a shaky breath.

"Poor Yugi..." Kay gave a small smile and gently hugged her.

"Hey, don't worry. He's the King of Games. I'm sure Yugi will win."

"But...he has to go against his best friend...and whoever loses-"

"Try not to think like that. We'll find a way to get them out of this. Promise."

Cat looked at her. "How can you promise something like that?" she asked. Kay grinned and gave a peace sign.

"Hey, it's me we're talking about." she winked. "I always find a way. And this time won't be any different."

"Ah...you're right." Cat smiled.

"See?" seto smirked a bit.

"Pathetic." Kay glared and elbowed him in the ribs.

"Could you shut up for once?" She hissed. He didn't answer and tried not to show that it actually hurt when she elbowed him.

"Time is running out, Yugi." Jounouchi snickered. Marik was clearly enjoying seeing Yugi squirm.

"It's my move."

"Hey! What in the world is going on here?" Anzu yelled. "Why is Yugi dueling against Jounouchi? Is this some kind of freaky dream?"

"No Anzu," Mokuba said, "some guy named Marik brainwashed jounouchi and forced him into a duel."

"Why did he do that?"

"Marik's trying to get his evil hands on Yugi's Egyptian God card so he's forcing Jounouchi to duel for him."

"This Marik guy's brhind everything? Then he must be the one Ishizu warned us to watch out for. Everything's making sense to me now." Kay nodded.

"Yeah. But now we can't get Yugi or Jounouchi out of this duel safely."

"Why not?" Anzu asked. The rare hunter in the crate with the remote to cause the crate to fall looked out at Anzu.

"Hey you, stop making a fuss, will ya?" he growled. "If you don't keep quiet, kid, you're done, so don't test me." Anzu looked up at the crate then back at the rare hunter.

"You wouldn't do it! You don't have the guts."

"You wanna bet?" he snapped.

"Anzu, don't test him!" Cat yelled.

"Look Kaiba, you gotta stop this duel right away, or the whole world may be in dnager of being destroyed. Do it now!" she cried. Kay looked at Seto. mokuba did the same.

"We can't, too risky. If we try to stop this duel now, we'll be putting Anzu in danger, Seto." Kay bit her lip.

"There has to be a way to help her out." She tried to think. The clock was ticking.

The duel progressed.

Then, Yami traded with Yugi.

"Hey, Yugi...he's taking over for the pharaoh?" Kay asked, staring. Cat blinked.

"But...why?" she asked. Kay thought then a small smile graced her lips.

"I think I get it...he wants to be the one to free Jounouchi."

"Ok, Jounouchi, it's just us now."

"He may be the only one who can win this..."

"My turn, Marik."		

## 13 - The Deadliest Duel pt. 3

last part, I swear and there'll be less of the duel and more of the characters because, let's be honest, nobody cares.

Yugi fought and played the magic card exchange to show Jounouchi the Red Eyes Black Dragon.

And he did not take it. It proves Jounouchi was starting to break free of the control. Jounouchi walked back to his side.

"It's still my turn."

"Go ahead and make your pathetic move, Yugi. There's not a card in your hand that can stop me from wiping out the rest of your lifepoints."

"And now I sacrifice my two monsters," Kuriboh and Big Shield Gardna disappeared, "So I can summon this to the field," he placed a card on the duel disk, "Red Eyes Black Dragon!"

"That's Jounouchi's card!" Cat exclaimed.

"A Red Eyes Black Dragon?! But if it's Jounouchi's car,d why does Yugi have it?" Kay asked. Adelinda looked up at Cat.

"Yeah."

"You see, Jounouchi lost that card to a Rare Hunter and Yugi won it back but Jounouchi refused to let Yugi give it to him. He swore to one day duel Yugi for it."

"Wow, really? That's...kind of weird." Cat laughed.

"Yeah, I guess." Kay shrugged.

"Hey guys, look." They turned their attention back to the field.

Jounouchi's eyes widened. "It's my...Red Eyes...Yugi..."

"That's right, Jounouchi! Fight it! Look at your Red Eyes and break free! I know you remember your Red Eyes."

"I...remember...my...dragon..."

"That Red Eyes Black Dragon seems to be affecting Jounouchi's mind."

"Well, you heard Yugi, it used to be Jounouchi's card." Kay and Adelinda looked at Mokuba. "Must be a hard spot to be in: a card you really care about being played against you."

"It's about to get harder..." Kay looked back at the duel.

Time was running out. Jounouchi needed to break free of the control and fast.

"Jounouchi! Marik has taken over you mind and is using you to destroy me! So I'm going to try to blast you back to your senses. If it doesn't work, you, me, and the whole world are in danger!"

The duel progressed. And things were only getting worse. Yugi still couldn't snap Jounouchi back to his senses.

Jounouchi was down to 2400 lifepoints. But he used another Hinotama on Yugi making his lifepoints fall all the way down to a mere 1000. There were only 20 minutes left.

(No idea how the duel lasted 40 minutes. they were doing flashback after flashback in these episodes. It's like, ten minute flashback, they just stand there walking down memory lane. And everyone else is like "....why don't they make a move already?")

Yugi striggled to trudge to Jounouchi, weakened from the power of the Hinotama attack. He put his millennium puzzle around Jounouchi's neck.

"It's yours now..." he said, walking away.

"He gave him his puzzle?" Adelinda asked.

"Why'd he do that, Seto?" Mokuba asked.

"I don't know, Mokuba."

"That means Yugi and the Pharaoh cannot switch out anymore." Kay nodded.

"Yes. And that cannot be a good thing." Kay frowned. "I need to get Anzu out of there."

14 minutes left. (How did 6 minutes pass so dang fast?! O\_o;;)

Red Eyes Black Dragon was in pitiful condition. Yugi was able to turn an attack around against Jounouchi, weakening his Panther Warrior with his Rocket Warrior.

10 minutes left.

5 minutes.

Jounouchi tried to power up his Panther Warrior with Graceful Dice nad lower Yugi's Beast of Gilfer's attack with Skull Dice, but Yugi negated a die and it failed, so his Panther Warrior was destroyed.

"Yeah! Go Yugi!" Kay cheered. Cat beamed.

"He did it! Alright!" Seto said nothing. Mokuba looked worried.

"Yugi only has 1000 lifepoints left. One more major attack by Jounouchi, and that anchor's gonna take him donw, Seto!" Adelinda nodded.

"Mokuba's right, Kay."

"But if that timer runs out first, Yugi and Jounouchi will both be fish food." Kay sighed. She still was drawing a blank.

Suddenly, they heard a car horn and turned to see a blue sports car.

"Hey Jounouchi!" Honda yelled.

"Yugi!" The guy next to Honda yelled. Mai was driving, Honda was in the back seated next to a guy with black hair in a ponytail and jade green eyes. Everyone knew him as Duke Devlin: creator and champion of Dungeon Dice Monsters. And a girl with red hair and bandeages over her eyes sat in the passenger seat.

"They found us! Help us, guys!" Anzu cried.

"Anzu?!" Honda exclaimed. "What in the world is going on?" Mokuba ran over to prevent Honda and Duke from going closer.

"Don't get any closer!"

"What're ya talking about?" Mokuba turned and pointed.

"Check it out. If we try to save Anzu, that rare hunter will released the creat handing above her head. It's too dangerous to risk, Honda."

"Why would they want to do that?"

"So we don't break up Jounouchi and Yugi's duel."

"That's just sick!"

"If you think that's sick, Honda, just look at the dueling set-up these guys put together." The group gasped.

"These guys don't mess around!" Mai exclaimed.

"Man, what;s the deal with the anchor and the chains?" Honda asked. "And how come Yugi and Jounouchi are dueling the first place? Come on, will someone please tell me what's going on?"

"Your friend, Jounouchi, is on their side," Seto said cooly.

"Huh?"

"Wait, whose side?" Mai asked.

Kay walked up to them.

"Jounouchi has lost his mind and he is now fightin gon the side of the rare hunters and he's trying to get rid of Yugi the hard way. The loser of this duel goes down to the bottom of the see along with that anchor."

"That's insane!" Honda said. Duke nodded.

"We gotta stop this!"

"But we can't!"

"My brother!" The red headed girl said. Kay looked at her and blinked. She moved to take off her bandages.

"Shizuka!" Anzu cried. "Please don't take your bandages off yet!" Shizuka stopped and looked up in the direction of Anzu's voice. Kay also looked at Anzu. "Listen, you have to trust me on this one, OK?" she yelled.

"Anzu's right, Shizuka." Kay looked at her. "Don't take the bandages off yet."

"Poor Jounouchi..." Shizuka whispered. Mai put a comforting hand on her shoulder.

"Don't you worry. If anyone can saave Jounouchi, Yugi can." Kay clenched her fist.

The only reason they couldn't save Jounouchi and Yugi was because of Anzu. But how could she get by that rare hunter?

Suddenly! It hit her!

The water! Anzu's chair was right by the water. If she could slip into the water at the right of the crane and swim to Anzu, she might be able to free her and run before the crate drops.

But it was a big risk. And the rare hunter could see her shadow if he looked to the side. He had to get out of the crane first.

3 minutes and 50 seconds.

Jounouchi drew a card an dclaimed it was the end. he had what he neded. Marik was about to win.

"No!" Honda yelled.

"There's gotta be a way to put a stop to this duel!" Duke cried.

"They'll hurt Anzu."

"Guys, there's gotta be something!" Cat cried. She was quivering. Marik was so close to defeating Yugi.

"What do we do?" Shizuka asked.

"Seto, isn't there some way we can stop this without putting Anzu in danger?" Mokuba asked.

"Yeah, Mr. Kaiba. You always think of something!" Adelinda said. In all this, nobody noticed Kay moving back and out of sight, praying nobody noticed her. She took off her jacket and boots and hair clip and dropped them near Mai's car.

"come on...get out of that crane..." she thought as she drew as close as she dared.

"Come on you guys! Time is almost up!" Anzu yelled. "You have to stop this duel now!! Forget about me, just save Yugi and Jounouchi!"

"Anzu, we can't."

"If you don't do something soon, they'll both be in major trouble. Please! Just do it, I'll be fine." The rare hunter jumped out of the crane.

"I wouldn't listen to her. Hah."

"Yes!" Kay thought. She made a ran for the water while the hunter was distracted and slipped in, carefully avoiding making too pig a splash.

Only a few minutes. She took a deep breath and dove down then kicked off the side of the pier towards the chair.

She paddled as quickly as she could, praying she wouldn't run out of air. The salt water stung her eyes, but she tried to ignore it.

Her lungs were starting to hurt. The shadow was coming closer. Just a little further.

She surfaced and took as quiet a breath as possible. She climbed up and hid beside the chair, safely out of sight. Anzu saw her an dKay put a finger to her lips to avoid her from saying anything.

She moved and pressed one button to released her right hand, then another to release her feet. She held her breath. This last step had to be fast.

Jump up, press the button, and run before the crate smashed them both.

Ok.

She got up and, to her bad luck, Jounouchi saw her.

"YOU FOOL! LOOK!" he yelled, pointing. Everyone looked over. Kay dashed and pressed the button for the last restraint.

"I don't think so." The rare hunter pressed the button and the suspense holdin gthe crate exploded.

"Hurry!" Kay cried. She grabbed Anzu's wrist and pulled her up and they both dived out of the way, narrowly escaping.

"She did it!" Cat exclaimed happily.

"Onee-Chan!!!" Adelinda cried, running over and hugging Kay.

"Hey, it's ok, Addy." The rare hunter stepped back, looking worried. Marik was going to seriously punish him later. Anzu and Kay stood up.

"C'mon, let's save Yugi." Kay nodded.

"Right."

At this point, Jounouchi had played meteor of destruction and Yugi had played Mystical Reft Panel. Jounouchi was free of the mind control, but now Yugi had the option to either destroy Jounouchi or himself.

Tears ran down his face. Only a few seconds left!

"I can't let you do this, Yuge."

"it's my decision...so now-"

"No Yugi!"

"Take care of my puzzle. Now it's time: Reft Panel, direct oyur attack toward me!"

The elf holding the attake turned and the meteor blasted Yugi.

"YUGI!" Jounouchi yelled.

"YUG!!!" everyone else yelled. Yugi fell over from the impact of the blast.

"NO!" Cat screamed. His life points hit zero. The timer for the anchor started at 30 seconds. Jounouchi's key box opened.

"Jounouchi....free yourself now...you've only got 30 seconds to make it out...then the anchor falls...you have to unlock your chains now...come on Jounouchi..." Yugi's voice was fading. "And hurry...before the

anchor falls and pulls you under..."

"Forget it! No way am I letting my best friend become shark bait!" Yugi took off his duel disk weakly. "We're in this together, Yuge! And there's no way I'm letting you take the fall. We're gonna make it out of this. Don't give up Yugi...I'll think of something!!"

That's when Jounouchi remembered that meteor of destruction forces Yugi's monster to attack. Red Eyes blasted him and Jounouchi's life points hit zero and Yugi's key box opened. Then all of the holograms disappeared.

Jounouchi took off his duel disk and Yugi's millennium puzzles then grabbed onto the chain and swung like Tarzan toward Yugi. Shizuka took off her bandages and threw them aside. She opened her eyes and was amazed.

"I can see..." she whispered. Then she saw Jounocuhi, swinging toward Yugi like a hero. "It's Jounouchi!"

He reached for the key. So close...

Then, the anchor dropped.

He grabbed it. Yes!

The anchor splashed into the water.

Yugi was dragged limply. Jounouchi felt panic well up inside of him as he was pulled down into the waves. Honda ran forward.

"JOUNOUCH!!"

"HONDA!" He reached up for his hand but missed and was dragged into the waves. They all ran towards the edge.

"NO!" Anzu screamed. "YUGI! JOUNOUCHI!" she snak to her knees.

Kay stood there and stared at the waves and clasped a hand over her mouth.

"Oh my God..." she said. Cat let out a sob and covered her face with her hands.

"No, this can't be happening!" she said.

"Nii-sama!!" Shizuka screamed.

Suddenly, Yugi popped up to the surface. Everyone gasped.

"Yugi!" Anzu cried.

"Hold on!" Honda and Kay dives in and both pulled Yugi to shore. Kay gently laid him on the boardwalk.

"Yugi, are you OK? Say something." He opened his eyes and she sighed with relief.

"Where's Jounouchi?" Mai asked.

"His key! Jounouchi never took it from the box!" Mokuba cried.

"Hurry up and go get me his key! I'll dive down." Honda said. Mokuba nodded.

"Right." Mokuba started to run and then stopped. Shizuka was diving into the water.

"Shizuka!"

"She's got the key!" They all gasped as she splashed into the waves.

After a minute or two, Shizuka and Jounouchi surfaced.

"They're ok!" Cat excliamed, tears forming in her eyes. Kay smiled. She was monitering Yugi and he seemed to be pulling through just fine.

Jounouchi and Shizuka have their little sibling speech, blah blah.

Everyone's all happy. They all got out of the water, watched the sunset, Jounouchi complains about being a bad big brothe,r and Mai slapped him, much to Kay's amusement.

She walked away from the group to where her jacket and stuff here. She was already pretty dry from her swim. So she put her hair in a low bun, put on her jacket, and then her socks and boots.

Then, somehow, it was night.

Jounouchi put the millennium puzzle where it belongs: back around Yugi's neck.

Kay grinned.

"Well guys." Thye looked at her. "I'm gonna head home and wash up. But I'll see you all at the Battle City finals."

"Ya mean you got six locater cards?" Jounouchi asked, blinking. Kay grinned.

"Yup." Adleinda ran up to her and grinned.

"Onee-Chan's totally going to win! Then there will be nor emor eking but a QUEEN of games, right Kay?"

"You got it, kiddo. So I'll see you all later." She turned and started to walk away.

"Kay!" Anzu said. Kay stopped and turned around.

"Well...I just wanted to say thanks for your help."

"Hey, it was the least I could do after the way I acted toward you guys earlier. Sorry. My uncle called me, he's fine."

"Well that's good." Kay nodded and walked away.

"See ya later, Kay-Chan!" Cat called. Kay waved as she walked away.

"So, the finals, huh? Well, time to show the world what I can do and what hides in my deck. I won't lose."

Wow...that felt like an actual episode ending. Well...next is...THE FINALS BABY!! Hell yeah!! I hope you liked these two updates. I just felt the need to write tonight.

## 14 - The Finals Begin

Kay got to her house and took a quick shower. She blowdried her hair and put on an outfit almost exactly the same as before, except her jeans had rhinestones on it.

She put her hair in a pullback. Kay packed some clothes, pajamas, and other stuff she needed. Adelinda did the same. They put on their backpacks and ate a quick snack.

"OK, ready to go, Adelinda?"

"Yeah." They heard the doorbell. Kay blinked.

"Now who could that be? We have to get going." She opened the door and saw three girls standing there. The first one was Alex. The second one looked a little like a shorter version of Anzu with longer and slightly more messy hair. The third has brown eyes and fairly long black hair.

"surprise!"

Kay blinked, unable to believe what she was seeing.

"Tori?! Kristen?!" she said.

"Yeah."

"what are you guys doing here?"

"We heard you moved to Domino so we becamse exchange students and we're trying to convince our parents to elt us move her permanently."

Kay squealed and hugged them.

"It's so great to see you guys again!"

"It's great to see you too, Kay." she stepped back.

"But now's not the time to sit around. I need to get to the Battle City finals!"

Kristen and Tori blinked. "Battle City what?" they asked.

"Come on, I'll explain it on the way.

~\*~

Kay walked into the stadium, followed by Alex, Kristen, Tori, and Adelinda. Seto had been almost ready to leave when he saw her.

"Kay! Adelinda!" Mokuba called happily. He ran over to them. "You made it. We were almost going to take off." Kay smiled.

"It's a good thing we left when we did then."

"but wait a minute, this stadium is totally wrecked. You're holding the finals here?" Kristen asked.

"Just come over here and register and we'll explain."

"Very well." Kay walked over to Roland.

"Please present your locator cards." She held them up.

"Here."

"Alright, here is your ID." He handed her the card.

"Thank you." She walked back to her friends. Cat walked up to her and smiled.

"hey, glad you made it, Kay."

"Thanks, Cat."

"Alright, may I have your attention please? All eight of the finalists have arrived, so now it's time to announce that although your locator cards led you here, this is not the sight of the Battle City finals."

"Huh?" Jounouchi said.

"That's weird..." Kay thought. "Then where will the finals be held?"

"The actual tournament arena should be arriving here nay second now, folks."

Everyone just stood there, confused.

"I'm lost..." Jounouchi said.

"what else is new?" Kay asked. He looked annoyed.

"Where are the finals?" Yugi asked.

"Look, up there!"

A giant blimp flew over the arena.

"It's Kaiba's blimp."

"It's huge!" Mai exclaimed.

"Just like his ego..." Kay mumbled. Adelinda giggled.

"Stand back, we'll all be boarding shortly. Kaiba Craft 3: you're in clear for landing."

"Oh man!" Jounouchi exclaimed.

"So we're dueling in the sky?" Yugi asked.

"You got it!" Kay smiled at Mokuba, finding him as adorable as ever. "In fact, 4,000 feet in the sky to be exact."

"Wow, now THAT'S a fun twist. All I need a parachute and it'll be perfect."

"What about a bungee cord?" Tori suggested.

"That would work too."

The blimp landed.

"You got barf bags on board?" Jounouchi asked. "Just checking."

"Alright! Listen up! It's time to board Kaiba Craft 3 for the start of the Battle City

finals!"

"climb aboard and watch your step."

They started up the stairs.

"A girl could definately get used to this kind of treatment!" Mai said.

"I hear ya, Mai." Kay grinned.

"Oh yeah baby! I'm kicking butt on a blimp!" Jounouchi said, grinning egotistically.

"Hold it! I can't let you nine on board without tournament IDs." Tori, Kristen, Cat,

Adelinda, Alex, Shizuka, Anzu, Duke, and Honda all stopped.

"come on!" anzu said.

"Yeah!" Alex agreed.

"Please sir, I've been looking forward to actually seeing my big brother duel for a

long time..." Shizuka pleaded sadly.

"Cut her some slack!" Duke said.

"Aw, what's the big deal?" Honda asked.

"Let us go on." Anzu winked an dgave a peace sign.

"We'll be quiet."

"Just this once?" Shizuka asked innocently.

"Yeah. I've never gotten to see my best friend duel." Alex looked sad. "Please?"

"Us too." Kristen and Tori also put on the sad look. "We haven't seen Kay in such a long time and to see her duel...well...that means so much to us."

"And I want to be there for Yugi. Please sir." Cat bowed.

"And me for Onee-chan."

"It is against the rules-"

"Give it a rest Roland," Mokuba said, "we can bend the rules for them. I don't have an ID card."

"But they're-Mr. Kaiba's rules."

"Well Nii-sama?" Mokuba aske,d looking at Seto, who was standin gthere with his

arms crossed. He closed his eyes, expression neutral. "Whatever." Adelinda beamed. "Yay!" "Well, sounds good like a yes to me!" They ran up into the blimp. "Let the dweebs go." "Thanks Seto." Adelinda ran up to Mokuba and kissed him on the cheek. "Thank you for helping us out, Mokie!" And she ran after the gang. Mokuba stood there, blushing bright red and rubbing his cheek. "No...problem..." he said in a daze. "Begin take off immediately!" Seto commanded. And soon, they were off. ~\*~ They lifted off. Everyone crowded around the windows. "This is awesome! I've never seen the city from this high up before!" anzu said. "Yeah, it's beautiful..." Cat breathed. Suddenly, a thought of the pharaoh flashed thorugh her mind and she blushed. "Hey Cat." "Huh?" She looked at Kay. "Are you alright?" "Oh, just fine. I guess being so high up is making me a little dizzy." "Hm..."

"The Igihts are so beautiful, thanks for bringing me, Jounouchi."

"Just one of the many perks of being related to a champion!" Jounouchi said before laughing. Seto walked by.

"You call yourself a champion, Jounouchi? You're here by a fluke."

"Grr, keep walking, Kaiba."

"Enjoy this while you can and listen, I wouldn't get your hopes up too high because it's a long way down from up here. Oh, and uh, last time I checked, monkeys can't fly."

"MONKEY?! Who's he calling a monkey?"

Kay had to bite her lip so hard, she drew blood to keep herself from laughing.

Alex smiled at the view.

"It's nice here."

"Yeah." Kay leaned over and whispered in Alex's ear. "Hey, have oyu noticed Kristen eyeing Yugi?"

"Huh?"

"Take a look." Sure enough, Kristen was looking at Yugi, a pale pink in her face.

"Hah, you're right!"

"Hey, I wanna go check out my room."

"We'll tag along." She nodded and they walked away.

Kay sat in her room, sipping a glass of sparkling water she had poured herself. The rooms were first class and the food was five star and beyond expensive.

Adelinda sat next to her, drinking some juice and snacking on some candy. Alex, Tori, and Kristen were raiding the fridge.

"So Kay, are you excited?" Adelinda asked.

"Hm. There isn't much competetition."

"Huh?"

"I'm not losing."

"Yeah, that's the spirit, Kay-Chan!"

"Attention duelists!" Roland announced. "The Battle City fianls are about to begin. Mr. Kaiba requests the presence of all finalists in the main hall."

"Oh, that's you Kay-chan." Kay nodded and put on her duelist and loaded her deck into it.

"Well Blue Eyes, we've come a long way. And I'll bet I'll need you in the finals. And I know you won't let me down."

"Let's go."

"Right!" They walked out into the hall, to see Jounouchi about to exit when Seto walked past him.

"Winners first, money-boy."

"What'd you say, tough guy?" Jounouchi yelled after him. "Yeah, you'd better walk away."

Kay snickered and walked past Jounouchi.

"Well, Kaiba was right about two things." She looked at him. "One, don't get your hopes up too high because it **is** a long way down from here." Jounouchi blinked. Kay smirked. "And two," she started walking down the hall again, "monkeys can't fly."

"WHAT?!"

"Unless you want to have a test flight, be my guest Jounouchi."

"HEY!" Honda grabbed Jounouchi to prevent him from chasing Kay.

"Calm down, man!"

"Grr..." Jounouchi stood and calmed. "yeah, you're right, Honda. No point in getting all worked up."

"There ya go, Jounouchi."

"Yeah! I'm gonna win this thing!" he said, posing.

"I wouldn't go that far." Anzu giggled a bit and Shizuka cheered him on.

"Hello Jounouchi." He turned.

"Hey Namu."

"Before we begin, let me just say may the best man win."

"I will, and let me just say I hope you're not too disappointed when I beat you, Namu."

"Well I admire your determination, Jounouchi, let's go."

"Yeah!"

~\*~

The Main hall was really big and fairly empty other than a few tables with food and drink.

Kay found some Swiss chocolate and ate one in hopes it would calm her nerves.

Seto was standing in the corner alone, as usual. Kay frowned and watched him from the corner of her eye.

"Look at him. Probably tihnking he's gonna beat us. I can't wait to blast him away. It'll be the most fun in a duel I ever had. Ugh, just look at him. Makes me sick. So tall, and cocky, and-"

"Hot!"

"WHAT?!" She turned to see Alex dropping some form of food on her plate.

"God! That was spicy." Kay sighed with relief.

"Dang, for a second I thought I was losing it."

"Hey Kay, aren't you going to eat anything?"

"I kinda want to and yet I don't. I already had some of the chocolate-"

"THEY HAVE CHOCOLATE?!"

Kay giggled and nodded. "Right over there."

Alex took off running. Mokuba and Adelind awalked by and Kay stopped Mokuba.

"Hey Mokie, you may need more chocolate, because Alex just found out about it."

"Huh?" He looked to see Alex piling the Swedish chocolate on her plate and in her pockets. Mokuba laughed. "It's no problem, Kay. Say, why are you here all alone? I'd expect you to be hanging with oyur friends."

"Just nerves I guess."

"Right, well don't worry. The fianls should start any second now."

"OK."

"Mokuba, I'd rather you not talk to this brat."

"I'm the brat?" Kay asked, glaring at Seto.

"Come on, Mokuba." He turned and walked away. Kay started to lunge at him, but Adelinda grabbed her arm.

"Onee-chan, don't get into a fight!"

"Grr..."

Soon, everything wa sin place. Seto snapped. (That part of the show was so awesome...he looks so great)

"Let's go!"

The lights died out. A device rose on the stage.

"Huh? What's that thing?" Jounouchi asked.

"Finalists and guests, may I have your attention please?" Roland asked. The lights came back on. "now, the first two duelists for round one will be chosen by lottery."

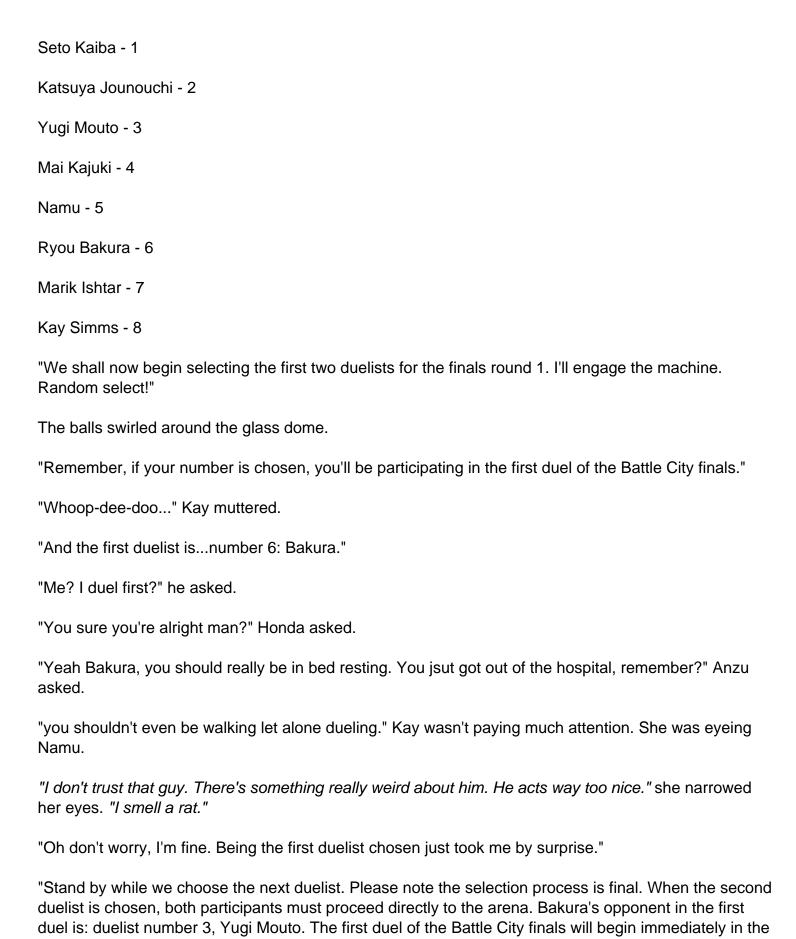
"What's the jackpot?" Mai asked.

"To guarantee fairness, each pair of oppoenents will be selected completely at random. You've all been assigned a number from 1 through 8. The selector will now choose the first two numbers. The second pair of numbers will not be drawn until a winner is declaired in the first duel, thus you will not know your opponent's identity until just before you duel."

Honda looked at Duke. "I'm fighting the urge to yell out 'Bingo!"

"Go ahead, I'll laugh."

"All eight balls are of equal size and weight. The selector produces results that are 100% random. Does everyone remember his or her number?"



Stratos Dueling Arena."

"I guess I'm battling Yugi. This should be fun."

"..."

"Kay-Chan?" She looked at Adelinda. "What's wrong?"

"Nothing, Addy-chan."

"This duel will be played in accordance with Battle City rules and regulations. The loser will relinquish his rarest card to the winner as well as be expelled from the finals. The winner will advance to round 2.

"The Battle City Finals are about to begin! The arena is located in the upper deck! Duelists 6 and 3 follow me. Those not dueling are welcome to observe. Take the central elevator to the Stratos level."

"Awesome! I'm there!" Honda exclaimed. Kay smirked.

"Sounds interesting. The first duel and Yugi is in it. I won't miss this. Come on, Adelinda."

"Right!"

## 15 - The Dark Spirit

Everyone appeared on the stratos level. Roland led Yami and Bakura onto the arena and everyone stood around it.

"Duelists! Take your marks! Elevate the playing field!" The dueling stage rose up.

"Whoa, dueling up here is insane!" Jounouchi exclaimed.

"And freezing..." Shizuka said with a shiver. Kay shrugged.

"Oh look, here comes the master of ceremonies now." Mai was right. Seto walked to his spot with Mokuba and Adelinda stood next to Mokuba.

"Alright, I'll make this speech quick so we can begin this duel."

"Him making a speech quick?" Kay whispered. "I think the apacalypse is coming." Tori, Alex, and Kristen laughed.

"Kaiba Craft 3 is now cruising at an altitude of 4,000 feet. The stong winds and cold air will test your strength and stamina. If you can't take it, you don't belong here."

Kay raised her eyebrow. Kaiba really did know how to throw nice twists.

"Yeah!" Honda exclaimed. "I dig this little twist!"

"I have to admit, Kaiba does know how to throw a tournament."

"Are you prepared to lose it all?" Bakura asked.

"He sounds different..." Cat whispered. Kay nodded.

"I don't like this...something doesn't feel right..."

"I won't lose. Before we begin this duel, why don't you tell me who you really are and stop this charade."

"Hm hm hm." Bakura gave a soft, evil laugh.

"Something definately is wrong...it's like he's possessed."

"Alright, have it your way then. But I think I know who you are." Kay gasped as something began to form on Bakura's chest. It was a necklace with a strange gold ring that had five spikes dangling down and a flat pryramid in t e middle of the ring that had an eye carved on it.

"What...is...that?!" Kay asked, eyes widening.

"I don't know, but it's scary!" Kristen cried.

"Oh no..." Cat whispered, automatically recognizing the millennium ring.

"It is you! The spirit of the millennium ring!"

"Hey, look at Bakura!" Anzu said.

"Oh no. He's wearing that millennium ring again."

"Wow, he's pretty hot." Kay and Kristen anime fell at Tori's remark.

"Can you please try to focus?!" Kay asked.

"That can't be," Honda said, "I got rid of it at Duelist Kingdom. I tossed that thing into the deepest part of the woods: miles form anywhere. I don't know how Bakura got it back, but I know it's not a good thing."

"Um, Cat?" Cat looked at Kay. "Mind shedding some light on the situation."

"Well...it's sorta weird to explain. It's the same with Yugi and the pharaoh. Bakura's millennium ring has a spirit too."

"Only, judging by your reactions, the spirit is not good?"

"Right. He's evil."

"My type of guy..." Tori said, smirking. Kay hit her in the back of the head.

"Shut up."

"Ow!"

"Well, now that the introductions are over and done with, why don't we begin this duel?" Bakura asked. His voice was deeper, more demonic.

"But first, tell me why you have entered the Battle City Finals and what it is you hope to gain! Is it about the millennium items?"

"Huh, perhaps. Yugi, perhaps there is something else that I am planning to take away from you besides your millennium puzzle."

"What are you talking about?"

"You ask a lot of questions, don't you?"

"He does." Kay nodded.

"Yeah."

"There is so much about this tournament that you are unaware of. So many secrets being kept from you: for instance, how do you know that I am working alone? And are you sure one of the people you believe to be your friend isn't really your greatest enemy?"

"I don't believe you. Lies are a part of your game, but they won't help you in this duel."

"Hmph, I don't know if he's lying..." Cat nodded.

"You may be right, Kay. With that spirit in control, I'm not sure who ro what to believe."

"It feels like everything is nothing but a charade..." Alex muttered. Kay and Cat nodded. Kristen sighed.

"It's all so freaky..."

"Yeah, even I agree to that."

"Wow, it really must be freaky if Tori agrees."

"Shut up, Kay." Kay stuck out her tongue.

"Go Yugi!" Kristen cheered.

"Defeat him, Yami!" Cat yelled.

The duel progressed.

Everyone grew worried and disturbed at the evil magic of the card of Dark Sanctuary.

"What's up with these creepy eyes?"

"Mokuba, I'm scared..." Adelinda whispered, hugging him. He hugged her protectively.

"It's ok, Adelinda. It's just a hologram."

"Then why does he feel so real?" she asked.

The power of Dark Sanctuary was growing more frightening. The ghost of the sanctuary was attacking Yugi and his lifepoints were falling: fast. Meanwhile, Bakura was gaining the lost points and growing more powerful.

He had a new magic card called destiny board. The letters were spelling out a message. DEATH.

"Ugh, all the ghosts and evil spirits in this duel are freaking me out, Seto!" Mokuba said. Kay was

standing with Adelinda and Mokuba at this point, and was hugging them comfortingly. Adelinda was hiding her face in fear, and Mokuba was looking at Seto but hugging close to Kay.

"Nonsense, spirits don't exist. The only thing Yugi has to be afraid of is losing this duel and his Egyptian God Card when all five letters appear on that destiny board. Not that it matters since I'll win everything in the end."

"Oh yeah, that's a great way to comfort your little brother..." Kay snapped dryly. She looked at him. "Don't worry about it, Mokuba. These are just holograms. Besides, Yugi will win this without even breaking a sweat."

"Ah, yeah! Of course. That way nii-sama can beat him!"

"Um, yes. Of course." Kay smiled.

Time went on. Soon, Yugi was jammed into a corner. Hope was dying, and everyone thought Yugi had no way of winning.

However, Jounouchi and Cat both had confidence and everyone else finally gave in and continued to cheer.

"Just make your move so I can end this duel, Yugi." Yami drew a card.

"Come on, Yugi..." Kay whispered. "I know you can win." Mokuba and Adelinda, both still hugging her, looked in anticipation.

"Prepare to experience a power like no other." Lightening rained from the clouds and blinding light was released from the arena.

"AHHH!" Bakura screamed.

"I sacrifice Dark Magician Girl, Gamma the Magnet Warrior, and Big Shield Gardna to summon the mighty Osiris the Heaven Dragon!" (Original name! Forget the lame dubbed names) With a bunch of expensive light effects and lightening, Osiris appeared in all of his glory.

"His Egyptian God Card!" Bakura exclaimed.

"What's...that?" Shizuka asked.

"Uhh...Jounouchi?" Honda asked.

"The hugest duel monster I've ever seen!"

"It's incredible!" Alex exclaimed.

"That thing...how is it only a hologram?" Kristen asked.

"You got me, Ki-Ki..." Tori said.

"So this is one of those cards...the Egyptian god monsters, I never imagined it was anything like this..." Kay thought, her eyes widened.

"Kay-chan!" Adelinda exclaimed. "You mean to tell me Uncle made that card. I've never seen it before!"

"He had them hidden years ago, Adelinda. The cards are too powerful."

"Yugi, your Egyptian God Card is powerful, but it does not guarantee your victory! I've come much too far to lose now!"

Osiris roared. "I'm afraid it's over!"

"Never! The Ghost of Dark Sanctuary is still wandering the field, Yugi. And now my evil ghost, it's time to attack! Possess Osiris!" The ghost tried to possess Osiris but it was destroyed. "What happened?! My dark ghost had no effect!"

Bakura was trapped. He had no more cards in his hand, no monsters, and his Dark Sanctuary was useless because of how powerful Osiris was. There was no way for him to win. The one facedown he had on the field was a dead card.

"I must win!"

"You won't win! This duel is over."

"Hmm, alright!" Jounouchi cheered. "Nice going, Yuge!"

"There's no way he can lose."

"Yay! Go Yugi!" Cat cheered.

"Prepare to lose!"

"This can't be!"

"Osiris the Heaven Dragon, attack his life points with-" His arm fell a bit and he stopped. Everyone stared. Why had he stopped?

Everyone turned to see "Marik" walking out with his millennium rod clutched in his hand.

"Marik?" Yami asked. "What does he want?"

"Hey, what's the deal?" Tori asked. "Who is tattoo face?"

"It's another long story."

"Huh?"

Marik raised the millennium rod and claimed that the spirit of the ring is under his control. Jounouchi tried to attack him and Honda grabbed him to prevent him from doing so.

And Mokuba got mad because Marik had interuppted the duel.

He released Ryou's mind and the evil side was gone and Ryou fell to his knees.

"My arm...it...hurts..."

"Bakura!"

"Bakura!"

"Are you ok?" Anzu yelled.

"That's low..." Kay muttered darkly. "Very low."

"Yugi help me...I-I don't know where I am. What am I doing here in this duel?" he looked at his arm. "What happened to my arm?"

"It is him."

"He is in pain. Without the spirit of ring he is weak. Therefore, you may with to reconsider your attack. The devistation caused by Osiris will more than likely kill him."

"What?!"

"Would you risk the life of oyur friend?"

"Only a coward would do something like this to win a duel!"

"That's crazy!" Kay yelled. "There's no way Yugi can risk hurting his friend, you're a bloody FREAK, Marik."

"K-Kay, calm down!" Cat said.

"No way, she's right! This is beyond crazy!" Jounouchi yelled. "That's a cheap trick, Marik!"

"Bakura, hang in there!" Honda yelled.

"Yugi!" Anzu cried. Kay growled.

"Kaiba, aren't you going to do something?!"

"I don't feel very well, Yugi..."

"Bakura!" Yami yelled, and he started to run toward him but Roland held up a hand.

"Stop right there. You are not allowed to have contact with your opponent during a duel. Take one more step and you'll be disqualified."

"Stop the duel right now!" Anzu yelled.

"Bakura needs to see a doctor, we've got to get him to a hospital now!" Honda shouted.

"Please sir, we have to help him!" Cat begged.

"If you don't continue to duel, you will forfeit the match."

"Yugi...help..." Ryou pleaded.

"Yugi, I'll make this decision very easy for you." Kay glared at Seto, already hating the words she knew were about to come out of his mouth. "Finish him off!"

"Kaiba!" Kay snarled. He ignored her and it was all she could do to stop herself from punching him.

"I offer you a second warning: make your move or lose your spot in the finals. Now go!"

"Chill out buddy!" Jounouchi snapped. He had climbed up the side of the arena to yell at Roland. "Can't you see the poor guy's injured?! C'mon! What kind of show you guys running here?"

"Jounouchi, what are you doing?! Get down!" Honda demanded.

"Are you crazy?" Duke asked.

"Get down or you will be disqualified from the finals as well."

"WHAT?! Are you kidding me?!" Jounouchi growled. "If I come down there, he's not the only one who's gonna need medical attention!" Honda had also climbed up and yanked Jounouchi back down and they both yelled loudly before crashed. Kay slapped her forehead.

"I'm embarrassed to say I know those two idiots..." she sighed. Cat covered her face with her hand and groaned.

"Aw man..."

"Wow..." Tori said.

"Are you two ok?" Kristen asked.

"Continue the duel now!"

"Yugi, do it!" Seto snapped.

"SHUT UP!" Kay yelled. "You-" Alex smacked a hand over her mouth.

"Do you want to get disqualified too?!" she cried.

"Mammgth reggo mof murh!" Seto smirked.

"You might want to listen to your little friend, Kay. One wrong move an I'll be more than happy to kick you off this air craft." Kay ripped Alex's hand from her mouth.

"I'D LIKE TO SEE YOU TRY!" Alex, once again, smacked a hand over her mouth.

"Kay, shut up already!"

Bakura pleaded for help. Suddenly, the millennium ring glowed and he stood up. Everyone stared and gasped.

It was the evil spirit once again!

"I'm back, Yugi." He laughed evilly.

"It's you!"

"That's right. I'm back in control of your friend Bakura. I still need him."

"What?"

"...that can be so misinterpretted..." Tori mumbled.

"Ew! Tori!" Kristen yelled. Kay snickered a bit.

"That is a bit wrong, Tori."

"Hey, I calls em as I sees em."

"Riiiiight."

"So if you plan on using your Egyptian God Card, Yugi, why don't you use it on me right now?" he challeneged, smirking evilly. "Come on, Yugi!"

"Alright, it's time! Now, GO! OSIRIS!" he yelled, pointing dramatically at Bakura as th elgihtening attack built its power. "ATTACK!"

Osiris roared and unleashed its lightening. Bakura laughed evilly as the attack hit him dead on.

"Wow...he's being attacked by a God Card...and he's laughing..." Kay said, blinking. "Yeah, mental

problems." Cat smiled and scratched her head.

"You may be right. Maybe being jammed in a ring had made him crack."

The holograms vanished and the lightening was gone. Ryou was lying on the ground and appeared to be knocked out as his lifepoints fell to zero.

"And the winner is duelist number three: Yugi Mouto!"

"Bakura!" Yami yelle,d running over to his fallen friend.

"Now, lower that arena and get them down here!" Jounouchi demanded. The stage lowered.

"Adelinda, stay here."

"Ok." Kay climbed onto the arena and ran over. She took Ryou's hand and felt his wrist.

"He still has a pulse, so at least he's alive. And he's still breathing." She looked at Yami. "But he is in desperate need of a doctor." Yami nodded.

"Yes." They helped him sit up and Ryou opened his eyes and was breathing heavily.

"Hey...so where am I?" he asked weakly.

"You're with your friends now, Bakura." Kay nodded.

"Hang in there, ok? We're going to get you to a doctor ASAP."

"Alright..."

"He doesn't look very good. We really do need to get him to a doctor now!" Shizuka said.

"So why don't we get Kaiba to land this thing?" Jounouchi asked.

"Yeah!" Honda agreed. "But first, help him onto my back so we can get him to his room."

"There you go." Honda carried Ryou away and everyone followed, except for Yami. Cat stopped and looked back.

"Yami?" He looked up at her. "Are you alright?"

"Yes, I'm fine, Cat. I'm just thinking...if the spirit of the ring had not taken control again, I don't know what would happened."

"Yeah, it must have been a terrible spot to be in. I can understand why it was a hard decision, but at least it turned out for the best." Yami smiled.

"Right, thank you Cat." she smiled and gave him a thumbs up.

"No problem." The puzzle glowed and Yami changed back into Yugi.

"Let's go."

"Right." They started running but Roland stopped them.

"Hold on! Accourding to Battle City rules, as the winner of the duel, you are entitled to take the rarest card from your opponent's deck. So it's time to claim your prize, Yugi."

"No way! I think Bakura's been through enough already." He ran off with Cat. Adelinda ran after them.

"Hey, wait up!" she yelled.

~\*~

Kay stood next to Bakura and checked to make sure he was alright. She made sure he was breathing ok and his pulse was not stopping. Adelinda sat next to her.

She listened to everyone talking about how Marik and the spirit of the ring appeared to have teamed up.

"Alright, I think it's time to talk to Kaiba about getting Bakura back to the hospital as soon as possible." Kay stood up.

"I'll come too. Maybe I can help since Adelinda and I are friends with Mokuba."

"Good plan, Kay."

"Shizuka, could you stay and watch Ryou?"

"Yeah, sure." She nodded.

"Make sure he's breathing and check for a pulse. It keeps slowing then speeding back up and it worries me."

"Ok."

"And if it stops or goes slow and does not speed up, find us right away."

"I'll stay too, I know CPR."

"Good thinking, Tori."

"Hold on guys!" Yugi exclaimed. Everyone stopped.

"What's wrong, Yugi?" Jounouchi asked. "Everything alright?"
"It's gone"
"What's gone?" Duke asked. Kay looked at Ryou and she noticed it too.
"You're right, Yugi!"
"What are you two talking about?" Kristen asked.
"Bakura's millennium ring. I don't get it, guys. He had it around his neck until the end of the duel. Now it's disappeared."
"That thing seems to come and go all the time without any explanation."
"Are you sure you're not exaggerating, Honda?" Alex asked. Cat shook her head.
"No, he's dead serious."
"Wow, weird."
"Your Egyptian God Card probably blasted that thing sky-high, Yugi. Now let's get going."
"Well alrighttake care of him you two."
"I'll stay too."
"Ok, Anzu."
"See you guys."
~*~
Roland came on over the speaker. "Attention Battle City Finalists. With the completion of the opening duel, there will be a half-hour intermission. At the end of this intermission, all remaining finalists are instructed to report to the main concourse for the selection of the next Battle City Finals match-up."
"We have to help Bakura!" Yugi said.
"And land this thing. So let's find Kaiba! He must be in one of these rooms."
Mokuba noticed them. "You guys, this is a restricted area!"
"Hey, Mokuba!"

"Where is your brother?" Yugi asked.

"We need to see Kaiba right now." Mokuba blinked.

"That's his room." He pointed to a door at his left. "But you don't want to disturb him." Jounouchi growled and started banging on the door.

"OPEN THE DOOR! LET'S GO, KAIBA!" he yelled.

"Are you nuts?!" Mokuba cried, waving his arms to try and get Jounnouchi to stop. "He's preparing for a duel! Stop it!"

"I'm taking to you, Kaiba! Get out here now-" The door opened and Seto glared down at a rather surprised and somewhat frightened Jounouchi coldly.

"If it isn't Jounouchi. You're lucky to even be in my tournament, and yet you insist on making a nuisance of yourself over and over again."

"Grr, THAT DID IT!" Honda stepped in front of Jounouchi before he could do something stupid. (Hah, that'll be the day)

"Hey, this is no time to pick a fight, so just calm down, man."

"Honda is right, monkey-boy."

"WHO YOU CALLING MONKEY-BOY, KAY?!" Jounouchi yelled. She pointed at him.

"You."

"GRR!"

"Kaiba, you've got to help us!" Yugi said.

"Now what?"

"Bakura's hurt! We have to land now! He needs to see a doctor right away, Kaiba."

"You're asking me to do the impossible." Seto sat in a chair. They were in his room at this point. "We can't make unscheduled stop."

"Don't you understand? Bakura needs help!"

"He's been unconscious since losing his duel."

"And if he gets any worse then he is right now, you'll be responsible!"

"That's a risk I'm willing to take." Kay stepped forward, a desperate look on her face verses an angry one.

"Kaiba, please!" He looked at her and she bit her lip. "This is important! I know you don't care much, but Bakura's life is on the line. Show some compassion, please! We're desperate and Bakura needs help."

"How can you say no?" Honda asked. "I mean, look at her!" he said, pointing to Kay whose eyes looked sad and sweet, unlike what most of them were used to.

"Kay is right!" Duke said.

"He shouldn't have left the hospital in the first place. This is Bakura's own fault." Kay wrung her hands together and bowed.

"Kaiba! Please!" He turned his attention back to her. "Someone's life is more important than a game!" She looked up. "What if it were someone else? What if it was Mokuba instead of Bakura who was hurt? Would you refuse to land and get him help too?" she asked. He did not show how those words affected him. Damn, even her face was affecting him.

It was so much like Mokuba's sad eyes. She was hitting his only soft spot.

"Listen to her, Kaiba."

"Yeah, she makes a good point."

"What's wrong with you?" Alex snapped. Adelinda stood next to Kay, their faces so similar in both expression adn appearance. It was double the trouble.

"Stupid girls..." he thought.

"I've had enough of this attitude, Kaiba. Find a way to land this blimp, pronto, or get ready to say hi to the buisiness end of my fist!"

"I told you, we're not landing, Jounouchi." He stood up.

"Then let's dance!" Seto turned nad walked away from him. "Hey! Come back!"

"Relax, Jounouchi!" Yugi said, holding him back.

"What gives?" Honda asked. Kay watched him. Seto pushed a button on a device on the wall.

"Send a medical team to Bakura's room."

"Good call, Seto!" Everyone looked at Mokuba. "Kaiba Corp's on-board medical staff has better training than the doctors at most hospitals do. Bakura's in good hands here." Kay's face immediately broke into a grin.

"That's a relief." Adelinda nodded.

"Yeah!" She turned to Seto and bowed. "Thank you, Kaiba-sama."

"Hmph." He shrugged.

They exited the room.

"Kay, how did you pull that off?" Cat asked. "I expected you to be screaming and yelling at Kaiba." Kay laughed.

"Yes, well, that wasn't really working, and when my yelling and threats don't work, I switch to plan B. My puppy-dog face." He gave them a sad, sweet, innocent look that could melt anyone's heart.

"Hee hee, where do you think I got it from?" Adelinda asked, before putting on a pout to match.

"Wow, a double duo, nice." Alex snickered.

"Yeah, Kay's melting Kaiba's heart." Kay blushed at this statement and hit Alex in the back of the head.

"Hey, shut up! It's just the face, stupid!"

"OW! Did you have to hit me so hard?"

"YES!"

"Well, Kay, thanks for standing up to Kaiba. It seemed to have worked."

"Hey, you helped too, Honda."

"I did?"

"Yeah. You helped the innocent act."

"Heh, it's the least I can do." Kay smiled.

"Kay, stop flirting with Honda. Kaiba will get jealous." Kay twitched and clawed Jounouchi by the collar of his shirt and glared at him.

"Jounouchi, listen to me. One, I was NOT flirting with Honda. And two, IF YOU EVER REFER TO ME AND KAIBA AS A COUPLE, I'LL DECAPITATE YOU!"

"O-ok...ok!" Jounouchi said, holding up his hands. "J-just please let go of me..." She glared but let go. The door opened again and Seto and Mokuba walked out.

"Hey, is everything ok?" mokuba asked. Kay crossed her arms.

"Jounouchi is pushing me to test his mortality. I'm going to my room." She walked down the hall. Alex, Kristen, and Adelinda ran after her. Seto waited until she was gone and then he reached out and grabbed Jounouchi by the collar his shirt.

"GAH!"

"Listen you mutt! I heard what you said, and if you EVER say anything about ME and HER LIKING each other, you will die...slowly and painfully."

"I'd like to see you try that, Kaiba." Seto's hand move from the collar of his shirt to Jounocuhi's throat and he picked him up, squeezing his throat. Everyone stared.

"Kaiba!" Jounouchi made loud choking noises.

"Do you really want me to try?" he asked.

"N-no..." he gasped for breath. Seto smirked evilly and released him. Jounouchi fell painfully to the floor, struggling to breathe again.

"Hey Jounouchi, you ok?" honda asked.

"Y-yeah. I'm ok."

Seto walked away and Mokuba followed.

"Hey guys, let's not mention this to Shizuka."

"Yeah, agreed."

Wow...WHY must this all be so long? -\_- And I tried to shorten it...

# 16 - The Second Duel pt. 1 Embodiments of Apophis

Kay was sitting in her room, looking through her deck.

"Something tells me I'm going to be fighting in this next duel..." She smirked. "Well, I'm looking forward to it." Roland came over the P.A system.

"All finalists must report to the main concourse. The next two duelists will now be chosen." Kay smiled.

"It's time." She got up and walked out of her room.

"Hey, wait for us!" Alex, Kristen, and Adleinda ran after her.

"This is your two minute warning! All finalists must be on deck in two minutes." She walked out into the hall and heard Honda and Duke telling Jounouchi, Shizuka, and Cat something. It caught her attention.

"No joke! There was this freaky guy in a white robe. He saved our lives! Just ask Duke." Honda had Duke in a headlock for whatever reason.

"Well, I didn't actually see him but someone had to pull us up."

"Knock it off, you guys. If you're trying to distract me before my duel, it's not gonna work." Shizuka looked thoughtful.

"Jounouchi, what if there really was some kind of ghost?" she asked. She gave a small smile.

"Shizuka has a point, Jounouchi. This ship could be haunted. Cat crossed her arms and nodded wisely. "The key is to keep an open mind." Jounouchi sweatdropped and looked a bit nervous.

"Come on, ghosts don't exist." Yami put his hand on Jounouchi's shoulder and he immediately perked up, freaked out.

"Are you ready for the next duel?" Yami asked. Jounouchi spun around.

"Don't sneak up on me like that!" Kay smirked, seeing THIS as an oppertunity. She snuck up behind Jounouchi, an evil look on her face.

"...BOO!"

"AAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!" Jounouchi ran behind Yami and Yami sweatdropped. Kay was doubled over, laughing.

"Oh MAN! That was too easy."

"Ok, here's what happened..." Honda began.

~\*~

"Finalists and guests, may I have your attention please?" roland asked. Everyone stood in the main concourse, waiting for the match-up for the second duel. "the second duel of the Battle City finals is about to begin."

"That's right," Mokuba said. "The selector will now randomly pick the next two duelists."

"Remember your numbers."

Seto Kaiba: 1

Katsuya Jounouchi: 2

Mai Kajuki: 4

Namu: 5

Marik Ishtar: 7

Kay Simms: 8

"If you are selected you'll be participating in the second duel of the finals."

"No, I thought if we were picked we win the lottery!" Kay said sarcastically. Alex snickered.

"I hear ya."

"And the first duelist chosen is: Number 8, Kay Simms."

"Yay!" Adelinda cheered.

"This will be great." Alex grinned.

"I knew I'd be dueling this time." Kay shrugged. "So who's my unlucky opponent?" she asked.

"And Miss Simms' opponent in this duel is: number 7, Marik Ishtar." Kay narrowed her eyes.

"It's him..." She frowned at Odion but did not say anything. He looked at her without emotion.

"OK, it's time to duel."

"Kay? You don't sound very excited."

"I'll be excited when I reach the finals. That's when I'll use my secret weapon." She smirked and Adelinda grinned.

"Oh yeah!"

"Interesting, Marik verses the Big Mouth. I wonder if he'll crush her with his God Card." Kay resisting punching Seto. Why give him the satisfaction of thinking she cared about his pathetic little insults?

Besides, why get riled up before dueling against a madman?

"Alright, both duelists will now take their places in the arena."

They got to the stratos dueling arena.

"Elevate the field." The stage rose. Kay stood there, arms crossed.

"..."

"Go Kay!" Alex and Adelinda cheered.

"Yay Kay-Chan!" Kristen cheered.

"You can beat him!" Yugi called.

"We have faith in you!" Cat yelled.

"The winner of this duel will advance to the next round of the Battle City finals. The loser will be dismissed."

"I wish he'd stop stating the obvious already..." Kay thought.

"Alright gentlemen..."

"AHEM!" Kay said rather loudly, glaring. Roland blushed.

"I'm sorry. I meant...uh..."

"Whatever, just announce the duel and remember that I'm a GIRL."

"R-right. W-well, it's time to begin. If you'll please take your places on either side of the playing field, we can get this duel underway."

"Yeah, I don't know about you Seto, but Kay does not look like a man..." mokuba said, a sweatdrop formed on his head.

"...no comment."

"Seto!" He smirked and something narrowly missed hitting his head. He blinked and looked to see a black boot nearby.

"Crap, I missed!" Kay exclaimed with a frustrated snap of her fingers. Alex grabbed the boot and threw it to her before Seto could do sometihng. Kay put it back on her foot.

Kay and Marik began shuffling each other's decks.

"You'd better not try anymore of your cheap tricks, Marik."

"Hmph. Say what you want." She handed him his deck.

"Well, even though I think you are a total sleezeball, may the best duelist win." He blinked and gave her back her cards.

"Thank you...I...suppose..." he said, sounding rather unsure. They stood on opposite ends and Marik pulled out his millennium rod. Everyone looked worry, except Kay wou looked annoyed.

"Did I not just say to cut the cheap tricks, Marik? Put that stupid thing away and just duel with some honor, for the love of God."

"Hmph, very well." He put the rod on his belt.

"Look Marik!" Jounouchi yelled. Then he stopped and blinked. "Did you just say, 'very well?'" Jounouchi asked.

"Yes, he did. Now shut up, monkey, and stay outta this."

"Grr, MONKEY?! Why I oughta-"

"Katsuya, calm down!" Shizuka said. He growled and his eyebrow twitched a little.

"Man...she thinks she's so great! I swear, Kay is like a little mini-Kaiba!" He got hit in the head with a boot and fell over. Kay smirked.

"Direct hit." Adelinda tossed the boot back up to her and Jounouchi's eyes were little swirlies. Mokuba sweatdropped.

"Wow..."

"Nice shot, Onee-Chan!" Mokuba anime fell at Adelinda's cheer.

"Alright then..." Seto smirked, admittedly very amused by this little display.

"Ready, Marik?" Kay asked.

"Yes."

"Hey Seto, if Marik really is the leader of the rare hunters, he must have a ton of rare cards in his deck."

"There's only one card in his deck I care about, and that's his Egyptian God Card: The Sun God Ra. And hopefully, that girl will last long enough in this duel for me to see how Marik's card works so I can win it for myself."

"But...I want Kay to win."

"I never said I want her to lose, I just want to see that God Card."

"Let's do this, Marik."

"It's time to duel, and destroy you!"

"Let the duel begin!"

"Prepare for defeat!" Kay smirked.

"I wouldn't count on that, Marik. Want to know why? I don't lose!" She drew a card. "I'll start."

"GO KAY!" Honda yelled.

"YEAH!" Cat yelled. Everyone cheered her on. A powerful gust of wind blew and Kay held onto her cards tightly.

"Ugh, it's so much more fun to wathc someone else duel up here then deal with the wind myself..." she mumbled.

"Well, are you going to play a card this century?"

"Quiet, Marik. I play set a monster in defense mode and that'll do it for me."

Marik drew a card.

"I'll play Temple of the kings." Kay frowned. She did not remember this card very well. The name was familiar, and she knew it was a field card, but she had no idea what it did.

"Man...I don't remember this card...shoot."

"Heh, the structure behind me is the ancient Temple of the Kings. Within this 3,000-year-old sanctuary lie the greatest treasures of the kings of Egypt."

"Well, mind giving me more details as to what it can do?" Kay asked, immediately getting a bad feeling about this temple.

"To protect the king's treasure, it limits the number of magic and trap cards you can play in one turn."

"Darn..."

"And in front of the temple, I'll lay two cards facedown as an extra boundary of protection, and with this move I end my turn. So try to attack me if you dare. You have no idea what danger lurks within these temple walls." Kay frowned.

"Dude, just be quiet and say 'I end my turn.' That's all it takes." Kay drew a card. "I play 'Graceful Charity.' It allows me to draw three cards as long as I discard two."

She drew three cards.

"I promised myself I'd save my Blue Eyes for the finals, so I'll discard it along with my Luster Dragon #2." She discarded both cards.

"OK, right now, I have my Cyber Falcon facedown in defense mode. Marik is luring me to attack so he can spring a trap...but I'll bet one of them is one especially designed for negating any magic cards that could destry his traps, so there goes that idea. I need to draw my trap jammer before I use my Heavy Storm magic card, or else I might be in big trouble. For now, I'll build up some defense for a safety precaustion."

She looked at her hand.

"I set one more monster in defense mode and one card face down. That'll do it for now. Your move."

"Observe, you fool. I place two more cards face down on the field and now my move is complete."

"why won't he play any monsters?" Kristen asked.

"That coward is just sitting back and waiting for Jounouchi to attack so he can spring a trap. It's the oldest and wimpiest trick in the book."

"What? Aw man..."

"My move." Kay drew a card. "I play Card Destruction. We both discard our hands and redraw whatever number he discarded."

"Very well." Marik deposited his two cards and drew two. Kay got rid of four cards and drew four more.

"Reveal face down: the magic card, Heavy Storm. This magic card destroys every magic and trap card on the field."

"I don't think so: Go, judgement of Anubis! Stop her magic card."

"I thought you'd try something like this, I play Trap Jammer."

"What?!"

"Your trap is canceled. And Heavy Storm will wipe out everything, including your Ancient Temple." All of his face downs disappeared, except for the temple. "Wait, why is your temple still up?"

"Don't you know? If I sacrifice one trap or magic card from my side of the feel, my temple is protected for the effects of any magic, trap, or monster card. Before your Heavy Storm destroyed everything, I activated this ability and sacrificed one of my cards."

"Fine, I don't care. I sacrifice my Cyber Falcon and summon Curse of Dragon." The face down shattered and in its place was Curse of Dragon. "Attack him directly with Dark Flame!"

Curse of Dragon attacked him and Marik's lifepoints dropped down.

"Yay! Kay took out half of his lifepoints!" Adelinda cheered.

"That was awesome!" Yugi said. Kristen clapped.

"Go Kay-Chan!"

"I must admit, that was a good move." Mai smiled.

"I'll end my turn."

"Wait, doesn't she have another facedown monster?" Cat asked.

"I guess she wants to save it."

"Yeah...I guess."

"That'll end my turn, Marik."

"Fine." He drew a card. "I play 'Pot of Greed' and draw two cards." He did so. "And I play two cards face down and end my turn."

"Fine." She drew. "I play one card face down and end my move."

"Very well." Marik drew. "I play one more card face down and that is all."

"OK." She drew. "I'll pass."

He drew. "I also pass."

"I pass again."

"Perhaps now I'll draw a card worth using." He drew. "No, this one won't do at all. I'll pass again."

"Lovely. I'm sitting back and watching my own duel. Now all I need is a hot chocolate and a good book." She drew a card.

"All right, now this is getting out of hand, Seto. If neither one of them plays a card this is gonna be a long duel, and boring too."

"No need to worry about that."

"Huh?"

"Knowing that girl and her impatience, she'll crack long before Marik does and then he'll make his move."

Kay smirked to herself. "That may be how I act in real life, but in dueling it's a whole new story...I might seem to rush into everything, but I've always got a trap of my own formulated and ready to pounce. So watch and learn Kaiba, because I'm going after you next."

She drew. "I'll play one card face down and summon Blackland Fire Dragon. Attack!"

"KAY!"

"What's she thinking?!" Mai asked.

"Activate Trap Card: Eye of Ujat. Now, your monster is under my control. Black Land Fire Dragon, attack her Curse of Dragon." Kay smirked.

"That's exactly what I wanted you to do."

"What?!"

"I play Attack Guidance Armor and redirect my dragon's attack to my face down monster."

"But why?"

"Because my face down monster has a special ability. When it is attacked, it destroys a trap."

"No!"

"Yes! Go, trap master! Destroy his eye of Ujat." Trap master popped up and destroyed the card.

"but your monster will be destroyed anyway, it's too late to stop the attack."

"So? I play another card that summons trap master back to my hand and your plan is negated."

"No!" Trap master vanished and the attack failed. "Grr...I play another trap card: trap hole. It destroys your Curse of Dragon." Curse of Dragon was gone and Kay frowned.

"I hate to lose one of my dragons like thatbut I guess I can't do anything."
"Heh heh"
"What's so funny?"
"Your mistake of attacking me."
"What?"
"You see, my Eye of Ujat card a ploy to get you to use up your face down cards. And when you attacked, you activated another card."
"Big deal."
"It is! For the trap you activated is a rare breed of card called a trap-monster."
"What?!" Kay's expression immediately grew fearful. "No! You can't have one of THOSE cards. There's just no way!"
"I do, and your attack activated it. Now, feel its rage!"
"It can't be!"
"It is! There's no escaping from Embodiment of Apophis. Assuming your fear, I take it you know how it works, right?"
"YeahEmbodiment of Apophis is a trap card but it acts like a monster in every other way."
"Correct. And I'm afraid it only gets worse, because you've triggered not one, but three of my Apophis cards."
"Three?! Oh no! My lifepoints are in serious trouble!"
"Ha-ha, I'm glad your math skills are up to parr. And now it's time for oyu to meet your doom. Come forth, my beasts!"
Three disgusting creatures appeared, each with 1600 attack points. Kay stared, her skin pale.
"What am I gonna do?! I don't have anymore facedowns and only one monster protecting me! If all three attack, I'll only have 800 lifepoints. I'm stuck!"
"That's insane!" mokuba said.
"I must say, I'm impressed."
"Kay-Chan!" Kristen cried.

"Be strong, Kay!" Alex yelled. She frowned.

"What's the matter, Miss Simms? You were so confident before. Have you realized you have no chance at winning this?" She glared and Marik snickered.

"Shut up, Marik. Just attack, alright? I switch my dragon to defense mode and end my turn..."

"Onee-Chan, no."

"There's nothing she can do to protect herself!" Mai exclaimed.

"Hang in there, Kay! You can't lost to this guy!" Jounouchi yelled.

"Heh, you're about to feel what real power can accomplish, Miss Simms. Now, my three beasts, attack! Destroy her Blackland Fire Dragon!" One serpant destroyed her dragon.

"I'm wide open..."

"Now, my two remaining beasts, attack her lifepoints!" They slashed at her and she fell down to her knees from the pain of the attack, grunting in pain.

Her lifepoints plummeted from 4000 to 800.

"Kay, no!"

"Ha-ha-ha-ha-ha! One more attack and your lifepoints are history!"

"KAY, GET UP!"

"COME ON. SIS!"

"Well, are you going to stay down on your knees and accept defeat?"

"..."

"KAY! DON'T GIVE UP!" she looked at Mokuba and Adelinda. He looked worried. Her lips formed into a smile and she nodded. Kay stood up weakly.

"Marik...read, my, lips: I will never give up. Either I win, or go down with honor!"

"Hmph, so be it...make your move..." She panted and narrowed eyes. "But remember, it will be your last!"

TBC...in pt. 2

### 17 - The Second Duel pt. 2 Mystical Beast Serket



"Prepare to lose." He drew a card and looked at it, then his face grew fearful. It took him a few minutes to look calm again. "i'll place this card face down on the playing field. Now prepare yourself for the next card I play will be the final instrument of your destruction!"

"wow, Marik looks freaked out."

"Yeah, you're right Adelinda."

"what do you think he just drew?"

"Now, I seal this card in the sacred ark of the temple. By sealing this card of the gods, I have sealed your fate! Turn end."

"Fine." She drew a card. "i pass this turn."

"I play one more card face down and pass."

She drew. "I play Monster reborn to bring back my Lord of Dragons. Next, I'll use Flute of Summoning Dragon to Summon my Hyozanryu and Diamond Dragon." The two monsters appeared on the field. "Next, I'll sacrifice my Lord of Dragons and Harpie Lady to summon Red Eyes Black Dragon!"

"HEY! She has a Red Eyes too?" Jounouchi yelled.

"Your turn and make it count, because after this, those lights are gone and I'm free to destroy you."

"Ha, you think just because you were able to acquire a few strong monsters you can defeat me? You are so naive for I am about to summon a beast that you can't destroy."

"What?!"

"While your monsters were trapped in my Swords of Revealing Light, I was able to prepare for the arrival of my ancient creature. And this all-powerful entity will serve as the guardian of the Sacred Temple of the Kings, protecting my sanctuary and all of the secrets that lie within."

"Just tell me what your move is!"

"You can't win once I play this: Cup of Sealed Soul. Then I reveal my facedown card, Seal of Serket."

"wait...I think I remember this...you're planning to summon the Mystical Beast of Serket!"

"Correct! Please hear my call, Guardian of the Temple, now! Mystical Beast of Serket! I summon thee!"

I giant, scorpian-like creature appeared.

"Great, that beast is killer..."

"That creature is minute compared to what lurked within my sacred temple." "So what do you have hidden?" "Within the sacred ark lies my Egyptian God Card: The Sun Dragon Ra!" "No! Not that card!" "Yes. Face it. defeat is imminent! You cannot win!" His scorpian had 2500 attack points, none of Kay's monsters were powerful enough. Her Hyozanryu had 2100 attack points, Red eyes had 2400, Diamond Dragon had 1600. "...there's probably a small chance of winning, but it'll take some good cards to do it." Marik's Mystical Beast devoured her Red Eyes and gained 1200 attack points and was up to 3700. She used a trap to make it devour her Diamond Dragon instead of her Hyozanryu so it would only gain 800 instead of 1050 attack points. "Can you see? It's pointless! My beast has 4500 attack points!" "Listen, Marik." "Hm?" "...I know I'm going to win." "What?!" she smirked. "I may need to use a power in my deck i swore not to use, but if it comes ot it, I will. My deck will not be defeated, I can promise you." "Grr, foolish girl. you can deny it all you want, but victory will be mine." Kay smirked at her hand. "Wrong, Marik. Wrong. And one more thing..." She looked at him. "I won't forget it when you controlled Jounouchi's mind, how low you stooped. However...you have fought a fair duel and a good one at that." "Really?" "Yes. And that scum would have never done so." Namu growled a bit.

"What are you saying?"

"What?!" Kay smirked.

"simple...you're not Marik."

"You look surprised. Why is that, Marik? or whatever your name is..." she looked up, a small smile on her face. "Odion."

"No way...how could you know my name?"

"Wait, that's NOT Marik?" Mai asked.

"Nonsense, she's insane! Of course that's Marik."

"Then who is Marik?" Yami asked.

"Yeah." Cat looked around. "I can't think of anyon-wait!" she looked in Namu's direction and Yami did too.

"I am! Only I hold the Winged Dragon of Ra and the Millennium Rod!" he said, holding up the rod. Kay raised an eyebrow.

"Really? so why don't you prove me wrong?" she asked, smiling. Marik narrowed his eyes.

"FINE! I sacrifice, MYSTICAL BEAST OF SERKET! And because it absorbed two monsters, it is considered three sacrifices which is enough to summon: THE SUN DRAGON RA!"

He turned and held up the rod to the ark of the temple.

"Ancient one, hear my call! I now offer up my Mystical Beast along with half of my lifepoints to release thee! Come forth my Sun Dragon and reveal your awesome strength in the name of the next great pharaoh: King Marik!"

A blinding ray of light shone up into the skies and black clouds gathered. In the lightening, a golden claw came from the clouds, followed by a divine bird-like creature.

"It's time, show yourself, my beast!"

The Sun Dragon was revealed as a grand, golden dragon/bird creature.

"Let anyone who doubts my power feel the fire of the mighty the Sun Dragon Ra!"

"That thing looks unstoppable!" Cat cried.

"It is..." Yami said.

"How can Kay win now?" Cat asked. Kay frowned.

"The final Egyptian God card...at last, it's revealed."

"Behold, the strongest of all the Egyptian God monsters. A being like no other. And, remember my Mystical Beast had absorbed the power of your Red Eyes and your Diamond Dragon, and now my

Winged Dragon of Ra has a total of 4500 attack points." "Don't forget, my Hyozanryu is still guarding me...so I still have time to defeat you..." "HA! That would be a miracle." "I've pulled off miracles, Odion." "For the last time, I am Marik." "You and I both know that's a lie." "Do you not see the great beast behind me? Perhaps it needs to attack you to knock some sense into your mind." "Well I'm waiting, attack me and get it over and done with. Or are you all talk?" she challenged. Marik growled. "Here it comes..." "Kay..." Cat said. "Yugi is there a way she can make it out of this?" Alex asked. "It's slim..." Yami murmered heavily. "What if she gets hurt like Bakura did? Yugi, remember what your God card did to him? These things are dangerous!" "I know. I know." "Now, Sun Dragon of Ra, attack her Hyozanryu and wipe out her last, pitiful line of defense!" The dragon did not do anything. Namu noticed a powerful aura coming from his deck and grew worried. "...I don't think it heard you." Odion turned and looked at the dragon.

"Obey me! Attack my opponent now!" he commanded.

"Do you tihnk Kaiba's program has a glitch?" Cat wondered.

"Yeah, Yugi. What's going on?" Kristen asked.

"why isn't it attacking?" Tori asked.

"I doubt it..."

"What's happening?" Anzu asked.

"something's gone wrong!" Yami exclaimed, worry taking over his features.

"It's like the card is alive!" Kristen cried.

"That's impossible."

"It's more than a card."

"Now what?" Odion asked.

"This storm...it came out of nowhere. And what's happening to Ra? It's...it's turning black." Kay stared and took a step back. "This isn't normal...Kaiba, if this is your dueling system that's causing this, you'd better fix it!" she yelled. Thunder crashed and lightening flashed powerfully. Jounouchi stared.

"Either that is the best duel monsters hologram I've ever seen, or we'd better take cover!" he cried.

"Kay!" Alex yelled.

"Get down from there!" Cat called. Kay looked at them and looked back at Odion. lightening was striking the arena now.

Marik stood there, head hung down, a saddened expression on his face. He recalled everything, and silently apologized to his master: the real Marik, for failing him.

And with that, a bolt finally struck Odion. The millennium rod in his hand cracked then shattered. Yami stared in shock.

"I'm sorry...ah..." he said as he began to fall. "I tried my best to serve you, my master. I tried. I...tried...unh!" He hit the ground. Kay stared.

"Odion!" she yelled, running toward him.

"KAY! ARE YOU BLOODY NUTS!" Alex screamed.

"Odion!" She narrowly dodged a bolt of lightening and ran next to Odion. "Odion, please, say something!" she begged. Alex climbed up.

"Kay, get your butt down here before you get struck too!"

"Get down!" Roland commanded. "There's a duel going on."

"What?! Are you blind?! Kay's opponent is out cold! He needs to get some help."

"Enough!" They looked at Seto. "I don't know where the lightening came from, but it had nothing to do with the Kaiba Corporation's duel disk system. Whatever it may have seemed to be, this lightening storm

is a freak act of nature and nothing more."

"Who cares what is was, Kaiba?" Tori snapped. "We need to get help!"

"Odion, please wake up!" Kay begged, shaking him.

She remembered...

Suddenly, a bolt rained down on her and she collapsed on next to Odion.

"KAY!" Alex screamed.

"NO! ONEE-CHAN!!!" Adelinda shrieked.

"Should I declare this duel a double forfeit, Mr. Kaiba?" Roland asked.

"WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU?" Alex yelled.

"Not yet. Since the duelists both have lifepoints, give them five minutes. Whichever duelist gets to their feet first will be declared the winner and continue on in the finals."

"What?" Alex asked.

"Kaiba! That's ridiculous!" Yami roared.

"Onee-Chan, wake up!" Adelinda yelled.

"They each have three minute.s Once that time elapses, both duelists will be disqualified for the Battle City finals."

Odion groaned and weakly opened his eyes. He started struggling up. He got to his knees.

"Oh no...take a look, guys."

"No, he can't get up first!"

"I won't...disappoint you...again..Master Marik..."

"It looks like we have our winner."

"and, the winner is-" But before Odion could stand, he fell right back down, too weak to get back up to his feet. "Hmm."

"I'm...sorry...sir..."

"you can still win, Kay!" Yami yelled.

"Please, get up!" Cat said.

~\*~

A young Kay stood with an even younger Adelinda and was looking up at Ishizu, who seemed about 15-16. Next to Ishizu was Odion who appeared to be in his 20s.

They were running around, playing some kind of game.

"Hey, Ishizu, Odion."

"Yeah?" they asked.

"Do you feel as if this all has happened before?" she asked.

"Huh? What do you mean?" Ishizu asked.

"It's almost like...I'm reliving this moment...it's like major Deja vu."

"I don't know what you're talking about, Kay."

"Hmm...and are we missing someone?"

"Who?"

"Your brother."

"Oh, you mean Marik."

"Yeah, where is he?"

"He's hiding in the shadows."

"Shadows?" Ishizu, Adelinda, and Odion nodded. Kay blinked weird.

"Kay-Chan!"

"Huh?" She turned around to see Cat, Alex, Tori, Kristen, and Adelinda.

"Guys? Um, what's going on?"

"You're dreaming." Kay blinked.

"I am." she looked at herself and was no longer little but 15 again and wearing her Battle City clothes and her duel disk. "wait, wasn't I dueling?"

"Guys! Look!" Adelinda yelled, pointed. Kay was weakly getting up to her feet. Her eyes were still close,d but there was no doubt: she was standing up. Sheopened her eyes and looked up, just in time to hear Roland announce her as the winner.

"I...won?" she asked. The few duel holograms vanished.

"KAY!" Alex yelled. She jumped up and hugged her, nearly knocking Kay over.

"Hey!"

"Sorry, Kay. But you jerk, we thought your goose was cooked!"

"Well, I'm fine...wait! Odion!" she pulled out of Alex's grip and looked at Odion. "Are you alright? c'mon, say something." She held him in her arms and he opened his eyes and was breathing heavily.

"Please, Kay...forgive me...I'm sorry..." she smiled.

"hey, what's a little duel between old friends, huh?"

"Ok, call me nuts, but did she just say FRIENDS?" Honda asked.

"I'm lost..." Jounouchi said.

"she called him Odion...but then, who's Marik?" Cat asked. Yami blinked.

"It was an honor to duel you, Kay."

"Same, Odion. But please, tell me, what happened? Why have you betrayed Ishizu? And what happened to Marik?"

"I am now...jsut a servant for Marik. The real Marik...is there..." He pointed weakly toward Namu, who was clutching his head and groaning in pain.

"That's Marik?" Jounouchi and Yami asked.

"It's that rod!" anzu pointed out. Indeed, he held the real millennium rod in his hand.

"So..that's Marik...I don't remember ever meeting him..."

"You only met...me and Ishizu all those years ago...Marik was not there..."

"Admit your true identity, Marik!" Yami commanded. Marik turned and looked at him, smirking evilly, sweat forming on his brow from the strain.

"Yes, it's true. I am indeed the real Marik, you fools."

"So Namu lied to us all along?" Anzu asked.

"I don't understand, what's going on?" Tori asked.

"Well, Marik is an evil freak who controlled Jounouchi and tried to make him kill Yugi. And apparently, that's the real man over there." Cat pointed at Marik. "He's after Yugi and his millennium puzzle."

"What? Why?"

"Power..." Cat answered simply.

"So he's a mad man?"

"Pretty much."

"Lovely..." Alex sighed.

"Namu? He was a disguise to get me closer to Yugi."

"You little worm." Jounouchi glared.

"He's the one who brainwashed you." Marik chuckled evilly. Kay narrowed her eyes at him.

"So, pharaoh, we finally meet face to face."

"Master..." Odiuon said.

"Now at last I can finish the job my pathetic servants couldn't! Yugi, your puzzle and power will soon be where they belong." Marik grabbed his head again.

"Oh no...I was afraid of this." Kay looked at Odion. "We're all in great danger!"

Yes, mega cliffie. I'd keep going, but I need to work on something else and take a shower in the next two hours, so I'm gonna end it here. I hope you enjoyed it. ^\_^

#### 18 - A Darker Shadow Is Revealed

"Oh no! I was afraid of this. We're all in great danger." Kay stared.

"Odion, what are you talking about?" she asked, worry lacing her voice. Odion was struggling to stay conscious.

"Beware...the great evil hidden within." His eyes closed for a moment.

"C'mon, stay with us, Odion. What great evil?"

"Master Marik has a darker side and I am unable to contain it anymore. It's too late now..." He finally closed his eyes and fainted dead away.

"What's too late?" Jounouchi asked. Everyone looked at Marik who was groaning loudly.

"Let me out. You can't restrain me anymore..." a voice, similar to Marik's, said evilly. Kay stared.

"This has bad news written all over it." Alex nodded.

"I'll say." Marik screamed.

"I'm gonna file this in the category of 'Not Good." Jounouchi took a step back.

"Marik! What's going on?" Yami demanded.

"Yeah!" Kristen was hiding behind Tori, Adelinda and Mokuba were behind Seto.

Marik's head was bent all the way back and he moved his head back and wa sdifferent. His face was far more sinister and seemed much older. The eyes were more narrowed and angled. His hair was ten times as crazy, it could give Yami's hair a run for its money.

He snickered evilly. A millennium symbol glowed on his forehead.

"I'm finally free again." His voice was darker and had a strange, resonating sound to it and a bit more hoarse. "Which means I can do things my way. I was restrained for many years by that fool, Odion."

"Who are you?" Yami asked. Cat bit her lip and was frightened. Ever Tori looked a bit shaken. Seto stood there without emotion as usual.

"I'm the true Marik and I';m not as kind as the one you've come to know."

"Kind?" Kay retorted. "Oh yeah, possessing someone and forcing him to try and kill his best friend is simply a lovely thing to do."

"Heh, in my book, that is kindness. And soon, I'll finish the job he couldn't complete and strip you of your powers."

"This guy is ten times as twisted!" Kay said.

He looked up to the sky, smirking. "For I deserve to be pharaoh, not you. So get ready for the real battle. And when I'm through with you, your puzzle will be around my neck where it belongs. And you will be trapped forever in the realm of eternal darkness along with your friends and Odion as well."

"Hey pal, get a life!" Jounouchi snapped.

"I agree with monkey-boy."

"Shaddap, Kay!"

"you fool. Thanks to Odion's failure I now have a life. Of course, by failing, Odion did prove one thing; only a chosen few can control the Egyptian God Cards. Kaiba, you're one." Kay looked at Seto.

"Heh, Marik. I'm sick and tired of hearing these Egyptian fairy tales. I control God of the Obelisk because I am a master duelist."

"Yeah, keep telling yourself that, Kaiba." He glared at Kay.

"Care to repeat that?"

"No, I'm good."

"Ha! Don't deny your ancient past. You'll find you can't escape your 5,000-year-old memories. You'll learn in good time, Kaiba. Your role in this game runs much deeper than you can imagine. However, that won't matter once I take over." He chuckled evilly. "and I almost forgot, the other one who plays a part in this little game." He looked at Kay. "Khephera."

"Dude, her name is Kay!"

"Perhaps, but before oyu were a Priestess who also played a major part in the past. And you too, I can imagine, how the power to weild a god card."

"Well, too bad I don't want one. Those God cards are a cheap trick."

"What?" Seto asked. Kay nodded.

"It's true."

"Well, you can believe what you want. I doubt we can test the theory as to whether or not oyu are able to wield the power of a God card. I will have killed oyu long before that."

"I'd love to see you try, freak."

"Hm hm hm. Yugi, the battle for the pharaoh's power will begin right now. A conflict 5,000 years in the making and there's no turning back." He laughed evilly.

"Ok, dude, you laugh WAY too much." Kristen nodded.

"Agreed to that."

"The Great Egyptian God monsters will serve and protect me while I rule the Earth as the new pharaoh!" And he laughed evilly again.

"...how was that funny?" Kay asked Kristen.

"I have no idea!"

"Right...well, he's a freak." Kay nodded. "A freak who needs to ease up on the laughs. It stops adding dramatic content after the first five minutes."

"I'd say more like the first three."

"Yeah, OK Tori. That works too."

"Depends on the laughter."

"True, and the plot and such."

"Yeah." Marikw a sstill laughing.

"...wow...just wow...ok, time to sneak Odion away." Kay was able to get Odion away while Marik laughed, ranted, and laughed more and she took him to his room. "Hopefully you'll be safe here..."

"Thank you for all of your help, Kay. I fear that this evil in my borther will only create problems in the future." Kay nodded.

"I understand, Miss Ishtar. And I shall help however I can."

Another cliffie! Sorry for shortness. But it's an update, right? Yes, I remembered Ishizu. How/when she got there...imagine it, alright? I honestly do not know the specifics.

### 19 - Two Connections

Kay was sitting in her room. She was listening to Evanescence (the most awesome band in the whole friggid world!) on her iPod.

"Don't want you hand this time, I'll save myself. Maybe I'll wake up for once. Not tormented daily, defeated by you, just when I thought I'd reached the bottom. I'm dying again. I'm going under, drowning in you. I'm falling forever, I've got to break through! I'm going under..."

"Kay?" She jumped and turned to see Cat.

"Oh, hey Cat. You scared me." She pulled out her headphones. "Are you OK?"

"I'm just...really scared."

"Why don't you sit down and talk to me about it." Cat took the seat across from Kay.

"That Marik...he's even freakier than before."

"And twice as hideous." Cat smiled a bit.

"Yeah...well, when he brought up how you, Yami, and Seto were connected to the past, I felt his eye bore into mine for a moment and it scared me. I suddenly got a vision about Egypt and I saw ME."

"You did?" Kay asked, blinking in confusion. Cat nodded.

"And I was standing next to the pharaoh and we were holding hands. And there was something else...I had an engagement ring." Kay's eyes popped.

"no friggin way!"

"Yes, it's true." Kay pursed her lips.

"Then...what Marik said was true?" she asked. Cat nodded.

"It looks that way."

"Wow..."

"Yeah, I know." Kay closed her eyea and was hit by a vision so hard, she practically flew out of her chair.

"WHOA!" Cat jumped up in alarm.

"What?!"

"I-I saw me! Well, not really me, my hair was longer and I did not have streaks in my hair, but it was me!"

"What was going on in your vision?"

"I was next to a girl with long hair...I think...she was dying...me or my past self was crying and hugging her. And it made me sad too..."

"Do you know anyone like the girl in your vision?"

"no, I don't...but...her hair...it reminded me of my-favorite monster!" Kay smiled nervously, not wishing to reveal the mosnter in her deck just yet. "Blue eyes white dragon."

"That's your favorite monster?" Cat asked. Kay nodded. "Wow, you and Kaiba have something in common." ^\_^ Kay winced a little at that.

"Ignoring that statement..."

"Heh, sorry."

"Right."

"so what do we do?"

"Well, why don't we try and see if we get more visions and figure out who we are. Maybe the next vision I have there's gonna be some audio." Cat laughed.

"I know what you mean. Well, Jounouchi is dueling Kaiba next, are you coming to watch?"

"No thanks, I think I'll just stay here."

"Ok." Cat got up and walked out of the room. Kay sighed and sat there for a few minutes.

Then, she got up and walked to Odion's room and found Ishizu crouched next to him, praying.

"How is he?"

"Not any better." She sighed. "I fear the worst."

"Don't say that, Ishizu. Try to be positive."

"I'm trying, Kay. But it's hard after what happened." Kay put a comforting hand on her shoulder.

"I know...Ishizu?"

"Yes?"

"Can you explain something to me?" "I can try." "Well, Cat and I both had these visions and we saw ourselves in a past life...Cat was with the pharaoh and I was hugging a girl with blue hair who looked like she was dying." "Oh, yes...you do not know of oyur past lives, do oyu?" Kay shook her head. "Well...in Ancient Egypt, I know oyu were a priestess named Khephera and Cat was a princess named Luna. Luna and the Pharaoh got marrie,d but he died before they were wed." "That's terrible!" Ishizu nodded. "I know...so Luna was forced to marry another man and died of a broken heart soon after." Kay put a hand to her heart and felt like she was about to cry. "Oh no...how could that happen?" "Fate is cruel at times, Kay." "Yeah, I can see..." "Do you wish to know about Khephera?" "Yes please." "Well, she was engaged to marry a priest." "OK." "And this priest is.. Kaiba's past life..." "WHAT?!?" "Please don't kill me." "YOU MEAN I MARRIED KAIBA?!" "Well, not exactly. Khephera was killed a week before their wedding. So...no, you did not get married." "Pfft, good. I hate him." "...my necklace tells me otherwise." "Excuse me?" Ishizu touched her necklace.

"My millennium necklace can look into the future, and I can see you will grow to have feelings for Kaiba."

"NO WAY!! NEVER!! UH-UH!!" Kay shook her head furiously. Ishizu sighed.

"Alright, fine."

"So who was that girl in my vision?"

"One of Khephera's best friend, Kisara. She died to protect Seth because she too loved him and you were sad not only because she died, but because you felt she deserved Seth and now they could never be together. Kay, have you ever wondered why you love the Blue Eyes so much? Kisara harbored the soul of the Blue eyes. You and Kaiba are the only ones destined to weild it."

"...I feel special."

"Indeed."

"So...what now?"

"You must assist the pharaoh in saving the world: you and Cat."

"Ok, I guess." Ishizu nodded. Roland came over the P.A.

"The next match of the semi-finals is now completed. Our final match-up, Mai Kujaku verses Marik Ishtar will begin shortly. Duelists, please make your way to the stratos dueling arena now."

"You should go." Kay looked at Ishizu. "You already missed the match between Jounouchi and Kaiba, at least watch Miss Kujaku face my brother...or, the person who was my brother. Perhaps, with one more person cheering for her, she will win." Kay smiled and nodded.

"Yeah, good point." Kay stood up. "Shall I call the doctor to see Odion?"

"There's no need, Kay. Just go on and cheer for Mai."

"Alright, thanks Ishizu." Kay ran outof the room. Ishizu smiled a bit and looked down sadly at Odion.

"Hang in there, Odion. I know the pharaoh will save us all."

Yay, a new chappie! ^\_^ Next one is gonna be short, I know it. So...yah.

# 20 - Shadow Games Take a Whole New Level pt. 1

Sorry, I messed up the ending of my last chapter so it has been changed to follow the plot better. Forgive me for the error. I forgot there were two more duels in the finals, not just one so I flipped the orders. Now, onward!

"HOW COULD I LOSE TO THAT RICH PUNK?!" Jounouchi screamed.

"It's ok, Katsuya." Shizuka smiled at him encouragingly. "You fought your hardest and that's what counts."

"Eh, but I wanted to win my first duel for you, Shizuka. But that rich punk took it away from me." Anzu sighed.

"Pull yourself together, will you? There's no point in being a baby about this."

"If that's your idea of a pep talk, Anzu, it's a crummy one!" Jounouchi yelled. She sighed.

"Look on the brightside, Jounouchi, at least you fought a great duel Shizuka will always remember." Cat smiled at him. He sighed.

"Yeah, you're right. Thanks Cat." Anzu frowned a bit at her.

"Hey guys!" Kay ran over to them.

"Hi Kay."

"And where were you? I assumed you'd at least be a part of the cheer commitee!" Jounouchi yelled.

"I was taking care of Odion. Besides, why would you need me to cheer you on, Monkey-boy?" she asked. He glared.

"WHY YOU LITTLE-" Honda grabbed Jounouchi's arms.

"Dude, calm down!"

"I take it he didn't win?" Kay asked Yugi. He shook his head.

"Nope."

"It was a close duel!" Kristen said. Kay looked at her watch.

"But...I left you guys less than a half hour ago. How long did his duel last?" she asked. "Well..." "Um..." Kay blinked. "That short?" she asked. "Let's just say that Obelisk was used in only three turns." Kay winced a bit. "Ooh..." "But Nii-sama fought hard and that's what matters!" Shizuka rooted. Mai nodded. "Admittedly, he didn't too bad. He just had a really bad hand." Jounouchi sulked. Kay sighed. "Hey, don't worry. You'll beat Kaiba next time." "Since when do you encourage me?" he asked, little tears running down his face. "Look, even though I pick on you, you're still a friend and I don't want to kick you when you're down. Besides, that Obelisk is nothing but a cheap trick." "Oh is it now?" a cold voice from behind said. Kay turned to see Seto there. "I should have known you'd say something without thinking again, Simms." "Beg your pardon? I already said I don't like those God Cards, Obelisk is no exception." "Really now?" "Yes really. What fun is it to just draw a card, play it, and say 'ha, I win. You suck.'? That's not skill! That's just stupid." She put her hands on her hips. "I designed almost half of the cards in this game and the point being to use them in synch and create strategies to make the game a challenge and fun, not just to play some strong monster and automatically win."

Kay shrugged.

"But, whatever."

"Hmph, do you really think I care?"

"No, I don't. But it's a shame because I thought you were one of the few people who really respects the game, other than Yugi. That's why you play one of my greatest card designs."

"Which card is that?"

"Blue Eyes White Dragon." Seto's eyes went wide.

"No way! YOU designed Blue Eyes?!" he asked. Everyone stared. Kay nodded.

"I went with my uncle to Egypt and saw a tablet with a dragon on it. That night, I had a dream of a blue and white dragon and so I woke up and sketched it then came up with stats and made it one of the most powerful monsters in the game. Uncle liked it and created it, but made it one of the rarest cards in creation."

"Wow..." Cat stared. "Why didn't you tell us this?" she asked.

"I never needed to. It's just family buisiness is all. And it's not really original, considering most monsters were depicted within ancient Egyptian carvings found in tombs of the great pharaohs."

"Hey Kay, there's one thing I don't understand."

"What is it, Yugi?" Kay asked.

"Isn't the Blue Eyes White Dragon your favorite monster?" Yugi asked. Kay nodded.

"It is."

"So why didn't you make yourself one?" Yugi asked. Kay was silent.

"Gah, I can't reveal my secret weapon! Not yet!" She shrugged.

"Eh, I don't duel enough and I don't want such a beautiful card to be gathering dust. Now, are we going to see Mai's duel or not?" she asked.

"Oh yeah!" Jounouchi cheered. "Let's go!"

"Race you, monkey." Kay took off running.

"HEY!" He ran after her. "GET BACK HERE!"

"Onee-Chan!" Adelinda ran after her.

"Come on."

~\*~

Kay got up there first and Jounouchi followed her and doubled over, panting.

"Man...can't you...go...slower?" he wheezed. She smirked. Everyone else arrived. Seto and Mokuba stood next to Kay and Adelinda. Everyone else stood in a small crowd and Mai was on the dueling arena. However, Marik was not there.

"Where's Marik? The announcement was broadcast in every room!" Mai shrugged.

"Maybe he chickened out." The doors to the elevator opened.

"Or maybe not." Marik walked out.

"Oh, look. It's the walking, talking freak show with bad hair." Kristen looked at Tori.

"Um, nice way of putting that." Yugi frowned a bit.

"So. Kaiba."

"Hm?" He looked at Kay.

"You beat Jounouchi, right? Tell me, exactly how long did it take you?" she asked.

"Heh, I want to say ten minutes, but that sounds too long." Kay bit back a laugh.

"Wow, he's reached a new low." She sighed. "Oh well, the competition still doesn't frighten me."

"Oh is that so? Consider yourself lucky that you're even going to the last round."

"Just for that, I hope I can crush you first."

"Please, it'll be my honor." She glared.

"Great, they're at each other's throats again." Alex sighed. "Can't you two go ten minutes without fighting?" she asked. Kay and Seto looked at each other than back at Alex.

"No!" Alex sighed again.

"It's about time!" Mai said when Marik took his spot.

"This won't take too long." He chuckled evilly. "Prepared to be cast into the shadows."

"Elevate the playing field!" The field rose up. "Mai Kujaku, Marik Ishtar, ready your decks! This duel will now begin." They both placed their decks into their duel disks and activated them.

"So let's go!" Mai said. "I'm ready to show you what real dueling's all about." They each gained 4,000 lifepoints.

"Good luck." (Yes, he seriously said that without any sarcastic remark to it. I was shocked)

"Thank you. Now ladies first." Mai drew a card. "Hmm, not too bad. I play Dunames Dark Witch in attack mode." A monster with white, mechanical looking wings, violet hair, blue eyes, and a white and red dress appeared with 1800 attack points. "Take it away, sweetheart."

"Hm, starting things off quickly, are we? I see."

"Hey Kay, remember when uncle frist made that card?" Adelinda asked. Kay smirked.

"Yeah, for Halloween two years ago. And you wanted it for a costume." Adelinda blushed and smiled sheepishly.

"Mmm-hmm." Mokuba smiled at her.

"I think you would have looked cute, Addy-kun." She blushed more.

"Thank you, Mokuba." Kay smiled at them and Seto rolled his eyes.

"Now let's seet what my deck has for me." Marik drew a card. "Rather, us." (Dudes, at this part, he reaches around behind him. It's so weird! I looked in the manga to see why but I don't know. I can't tell if he was trying to get his millennium rod or his back just itched.) He looked at the card. "Excellent. Now I'll summon my Revival Jam in defense mode."

A monster made out of a gel-like blue subtance with a odd, blobby shape and what looked like black holes for its eyes and mouth appeared.

"And the magic card Jam Breeding Machine. The monster-producing machine will create one slime token for me with every passing turn. So I'd suggest you attack now before my slime creatures far outnumber you." Kay stared, pure shock and a little horror on her face.

"No way! This is not good." Everyone looked at her.

"What do you mean?" Honda asked. Yugi nodded.

"Kay is right."

"What's the big deal?" Duke asked. "That thing only has 500 defense points."

"Yeah, isn't Mai's witch strong enough to beat it?" Shizuka asked.

"With this specific monster, the points don't matter." Yugi nodded.

"It's indestructable?"

"What?! That's impossible!"

"No, Jounouchi, I'm afraid it is very possible."

"But how?" Anzu asked.

"You'll find out if Mai attacks."

"And then there's that Jam breeding machine." Kay nodded.

"I'm gonna bet Marik wants to use that thing to summon the Sky Dragon Ra."

"My move now. Now my Dark Witch, attack his Revival Jam with Spellbinding Flux!"

Dark Witch released a burst of black energy with silver sparkles in it that gave the impression of the night sky filled with stars. The random burst of dark energy splattered Revival Jam into blue blobs of plasma and silver sparkles.

"That's it for Revival Jam."

"Yeah! Way to go Mai!" Jounouchi cheered. Kay frowned. Marik smirked.

"Oh, is it?" he asked. The blobs of plasma all drew magnetically to a spot above Marik's hea dand formed a core of plasma which gradually grew bigger until it formed back into Revival Jam as if Mai had never attacked. "You'd better look again."

"What?!" Mai asked.

"Revival Jam is able to regenerate itself whenever it's attacked." Kay nodded.

"Marik's right, so just attacking is not enough, no matter how powerful a monster is." Yugi nodded.

"Right. When I faced it, even an attack from Slifer wasn't enough to destroy it." Everyone gasped.

"You mean even an Egyptian God Card can't destory that thing?" Jounouchi asked.

"No. Mai's going to have to rethink her strategy because she can't afford to waste time trying to attack it. The clock is ticking before Marik's Sun Dragon makes its curtain call."

Marik drew a card. "Now let's see...I'll play this, my Pot of Greed: a magic card that allows me to draw two more cards from my deck."

"We know, Marik! Just get on with it!" Kay yelled. Marik smirked.

"It appears our spectators are impatient." He chuckled evilly. "Now then, have you realized that this duel is far more than you can handle? Observe as my Jam Breeding Machine creates the first of many slime tokens."

A blue blob of plasma that sort of resembled Revival Jam appeared with 500 attack and defense points.

"And finally, I place this facedown on the field to render your attacks useless." He played a facedown card.

"Huh? What does he mean, Seto?" Mokuba asked.

"Marik must have thrown down a trap card that's somehow able to block Kujaku's attacks. We'll soon find out." Kay frowned a bit and looked to the field.

"Kaiba's right. Revival Jam has a series of trap cards that work beautifully with its ability to regenerate. I can't remember them out of th top of my head, but I think one can do just that: render all attacks useless by making Revival Jam a moving barrier."

"Onee-Chan, what's Marik trying to do?" Adelinda asked.

"I am not 100% positive but I do know there is a way to make Revival Jam the ultimate defense."

"How?"

"Make it block out any and all enemy attack."

"What?!" Jounouchi gasped.

"That beast is possibly the most powerful defense mechanism in all of Duel Monsters. Why else do you think it's such a rare card? If just anyone could get it, the game would be near impossible to win."

"Can Mai stop it?" Shizuka asked.

"Maybe. It's hard to destroy, but preventing Marik's trap is a simple enough task if she has the right magic card." Seto nodded.

"We'll just have to wait and see if Kujaku gets lucky."

"Well put, Kaiba." Mai drew a card.

"All right, tough guy, check it out. I play this, the magic card Harpie's Feather Duster. It blows away all your trap and magic card!"

Marik's Jam Breeding Machine and face down vanished in a powerful gust of wind and feathers. He straightened and smirked wickedly.

"Sorry, Marik, but I saw your dirty little plan so I swept it right up!"

"Yeah!" Jounouchi cheered. Kay smiled.

"Not bad, Kujaku." Seto smirked.

"Well, I guess she got lucky after all."

"Kind of like Jounouchi. You know, they do make a good couple now that I think about it." Seto sighed and looked at her.



to either)

"Now attack, my Masked Beast! Destroy her Dark Witch."

"Wrong! Now I activate my trap card, Mirror Wall!" A blue and purple crystal wall grw quickly in front of Dunames Dark Witch and the Masked Beast hit it head on. "It attacks your beasy with its own reflection cutting its power in half!"

Masked Beast Des Guardius' attack strength fell down to 1650.

"Dark Witch, finish off his Masked Beast!"

The monster was destroyed and Marik's points fell down to 2550.

"Ka-blam!" Jounouchi exclaimed. "Marik's lost even more life points."

"Hold on, it's not time to celebrate yet." A strange mask flew out and landed on Dunames Dark Witch's face. Everyone gasped.

"Oh! Dark Witch!"

"Now Marik has control over Mai's monster." Dark Witch switched sides of the field.

"When it's destroyed, my Masked Beast leaves behind the Mask of Remnants which allows me to reshuffle my deck." Marik shuffled his cards. "But more importantly, I gain control of your Dark Witch. Next, I think I'll do away with your pathetic little trap as I play the magic card Remove Trap." Mirror Wall vanished. "Good riddance."

"Hmph." Mai frowned but seemed remotely unphased. Honda looked at Mai.

"Aw man! Looks like Mai's in some serious trouble out there. She'd better come up with something before Marik unleashes that Egyptian God Card."

"Hey, she's doing just fine, ok?" Jounouchi snapped. "I mean, take a look at the scoreboard, bozo. She's winning this whole thing."

"Wishful thinking, Jounouchi. But lifepoints are not always the thing to be concerned with..." Kay averted her eyes back to the field. "Marik took Mai's monster and destroyed her trap card, leaving her wide open. And if that God Card shows up, she's as good as dead."

Mai drew a card. "OK, Marik, you may have gotten a few lucky shots but that's over! Things are about to change."

"That's the spirit, Mai!" Shizuka called.

"Yeah, beat the cape off that weirdo!" Anzu yelled. Marik smirked.

"Indeed. Things are about to change much more than you know." He pulled out his millennium rod and everyone immediately looked worried.

"What's he doing with that thing?" Jounouchi asked, looking angry.

"I don't know..." Yugi whispered. "But it's not a good thing."

"Yugi, do you think Marik is planning to throw Mai into a Shadow Game?" Yami asked.

"Probably. And if that happens, who knows what the penalty will be. Remember what happened when you played Shadow Games with all those people? They became dillusional or whatever. Some died at the end and Kaiba fell into a coma."

"True, but in comparison to what we've seen Marik done, my past shadow games are nothing."

"Yeah..."

## (My first Yami - Yugi conversation this whole story! I'm so proud)

"Now listen to me, foolish girl, I'm afraid that practice time is over." Marik laughed evilly. "I'd like to take this match to the next level."

"I beg your pardon? Mind saying that in English?" Mai asked.

"Oh no!" Yugi cried.

"Oh yes! Let my Shadow Game begin!" A black, blue, and purple fog appeared on the field.

"This can't be happening!" Yami, who had just switched out, exclaimed.

"I'm scared, you guys!" Shizuka cried. Adelinda hugged Kay.

"Onee-Chan, what is going on?"

"I don't know." Kay narrowed her eyes. "There's so much darkness and evil in the air, I can almost feel it. It's as if it's nothing but chaos and horror everywhere."

"What's with this fog?" Mai asked. "This is not part of the game! What have you done, Marik?" she cried, fear and panic taking over her face.

"Welcome to the Heart of Darkness."

"It's just as I feared!"

"What, Yami?" Cat asked.

"This is a Shadow Game."

"A shadow game? What's that?" Alex asked.

"It's a sinister game in which the loser of the duel must pay a heavy price."

"Like what?" Tori asked.

"Sometimes they are punished with illusions that correspond to their sin that upset whoever challeneged

them to the game. Other times it's their soul."

"You mean their life?"

"The soul is different. If it's taken away, your body is a hollow shell. Your body lives, but you die."

"How horrible!" Yami nodded.

"There are various other punishments. Death is a common one. But perhaps the worst is death through mind torture."

"What?!" Jounouchi asked.

"Your mind is locked in a powerful state of hypnosis where you experience undescribed terror as you are tortured until you finally die, completely suffering."

"We have to save her!"

"There's nothing you fools can do."

"Mai! Forfeit the match!" Yami yelled. "There's more at stake than you know!"

"Yugi, have you completely lost it? I've worked hard for this. It'll take a lot more than some creepy fog to scare me off."

"But Mai-"

"No buts, Kay. I've got a duel to win."

"Mai!"

"Listen everyone, I appreciate your concerns but my mind's made up. I'm a big girl and I can take care of myself, now please stay out of this."

"Well then, that's that. If there's one thing about Mai, once the girl makes up her mind there's no way to change it." Anzu nodded.

"Jounouchi's right. We'll just have to hope she wins and fast."

"You ready, Marik?" she asked. He laughed evilly.

"I'm always ready for a shadow game."

"All right, here I go." She drew a card. "I place one card facedown and I summon the Unfriendly Amazon!"

An amazon warrior appeared ont he field and raised up her sword. She had 2000 attack points.

A glowing rope appeared from her Amazon to her.

"What the heck is with this rope?" She asked. Marik snickered.

"Confused? Don't worry, it will all be made clear very soon." Mai frowned.

"Whatever. Unfriendly Amazon, attack the Dark Witch with Soaring Slash!" Unfriendly Amazon jumped up into the air and brought her sword down on Dunames Dark Witch who vanished. Mai smiled then gasped.

She looked at her chest a shrieked.

"Blood?!" Marik smirked as he lost 200 lifepoints.

"Heh heh, I see my little game has startled you." She screamed. Everyone stared.

"Mai, what's wrong?" Jounouchi yelled. Mai fell to her knees and took shaking breaths.

"It hurts..." she moaned. She was bleeding from the chest, but nobody could see any blood. Maik laughed.

"Your friend is experiencing the overwhelming pain of her monster's demise."

"MAI! SNAP OUT OF IT!"

"There's nothing you can do to save her, you fools. Each player is connected to their monster by a lifeline. So when one feels pain, so does the other."

"THAT'S INSANE!" Marik snickered.

"Call it whatever you want. Your little friend is history! AHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA!"

Dun dun dun!!! Yes, I liked this duel because it was very cool. I am combing attributes of the dubbed show and the manga. In the show, Mai only loses memory of people when her monsters die. In the manga, her monsters and her are connected by a lifeline and she gets hurt when they are attacked, or she thinks. It's much cooler and more dramatic, so I hope you enjoy it. I plan to end the duel next chapter but it may be three parts. We'll see. And now that it's Thanksgiving Break, I should be able to get more chapters done.

# 21 - Shadow Games Take a Whole New Level pt. 2

"MAI!" Yami yelled. "Don't be fooled!"

"What's going on?" Cat cried.

"It's only an illusion! That pain isn't real!" Mai looked at Yami.

"What? It's not real..." She looked and gasped. "He's right." Mai stood up. "Thanks Yugi." She smiled.

"Well, since I assume there's nothing more you can do, I'll begin my turn." Marik drew a card.

"Heh, I'll place one card face down and summed Makyura the Destructor in attack mode!"

And odd, bluish monster with a millennium eye in purple and gold armor with 1600 attack points appeared on the field.

"Whoa, now that's freaky." Tori nodded.

"You can say that again, Ki-Chan."

"Kay, can Miss Kujaku still win this?" Adelinda asked.

"Huh?" she looked at her and then smiled reassuringly. "Sure she can. I know Mai, and she's one of the best duelists out there. It'll take some work, but she can make it."

"Next I'll add this all-powerful magic card, the Mystical Black Pendant." Kay winced.

"Crud! That's a wicked equip card."

"How?" Mokuba asked.

"If Mai destroys it, she loses lifepoints and it adds 500 points to Marik's dark monster."

"Black Pendant's dark magic raises my monster's attack strength by 500." Mai's Unfriendly Amazon was 100 attack points weaker.

"Time for more suffering, Miss Kujaku. I hope you enjoy feeling the pain of your mosnters, now you all can truly be in synch." She glared.

"That's enough!" Marik pointed at the Amazon.

"And now, Makyura! 3-claw slash!"

"Activate trab card! Amazon Archers!" Five amazons appeared on the field with a bow and arrows. They each shot an arrow and hit Makyura. "Now your monster's attack points are reduced by 500 bringing them back to where they started." Marik's lips formed a nasty smirk.

"Very clevar."

"YEAH! Go Mai!" Jounouchi cheered. Adelinda clapped happily.

"Awesome! That'll bring her back on top." Kay nodded.

"Totally."

"Now it's my monster's turn to attack! Go, Unfriendly Amazon! Soaring Slash attack!" Mai's Amazon slashed off Makyura's head. Suddenly, Marik's head fell off.

"What?!"

"Keh keh...nice hit..."

"EEYAH!!" she screamed. "HIS HEAD!"

"Mai, are you ok?!" Jounouchi yelle.d

"That scream wasn't normal!" Cat exclaimed.

"Miss Kujaku!" Shizuka called desperately. "What's the matter?" Marik's lifepoints fell to 1950.

"Pull yourself together!" Kay yelled. "Remember, it's not real!"

"Heh, why are you so afraid? you were the one who cut off my monster's head. But here..." He grabbed his head and reattached it. "Does this help? Besides, you've fallen into my trap."

"T-trap?"

"You see, when a monster wearing the black pendant is destroyed, its opponent loses 500 lifepoints." Mai's lifepoints fell to 3500. "And I'm afraid there's another penalty for you to pay, my dear. By sending Makyura the Destructor to the graveyard, you've activated its special ability which allows me to play any trap card I want from my hand."

"Ah!"

"Snd I think it will serve me best to activate this one: Rope of Life!" A rope appeared and blunged into a dark opening. "This card brings a monster back from my graveyard and empowers it with 800 extra attack points. So say goodbye to your Unfriendly Amazon."

"It can't be!" she cried.

"Oh, it can." The rope began to withdraw from the dark void, carrying Makyura with it, and it had a boost of 800 points, giving it an attack strength of 2400. "Makyura the Destructor, attack her Amazon now!"

Unfriendly Amazon was slashed and destroyed. Mai shrieked as another gash appeared on her.

"MAI!" everyone yelled. Yami glared.

"YO MAI! IT'S JUST AN ILLUSION!" Jounouchi yelled.

"CALM DOWN!" Tori cried.

"YOU CAN WIN THIS!!" Kristen called.

"GO MAI!" Anzu ans Shizuka yelled. Mai stood up and took a deep breath, overpowering the shadow illusion.

"Is the danger perhaps a little too real for you?"

"Not even close. Your head games don't scare me, sweetheart."

"YEAH! You tell him, Mai!" Jounouchi yelled. Kay grinned.

"Now THAT'S our girl, the Mai we all know and love. If she'd stayed down I would have not known who she was."

"Uh-huh!" Adelinda nodded.

"Suit yourself. But realize when I'm through with you, you'll be begging for the peace of death."

"Well bring it on, Marik. I've never backed out of a duel and I won't start now!"

"Hmph, then prepare to lose."

"Guess we'll see. So give the scare tactics a rest and get ready, buddy, 'cause now it's my turn and I play Amazon Chain Master in attack mode."

A tanned Amazon with gray hair the color of storm clouds in a ponytail wearing a blue...dress...thing with a gold chain that had a spiky hook at the end appeared. Her attack strength was 1500.

"Then I'll play once card facedown on the field. Now, take your best shot, tough guy." (\*Sings\* hit me with your best shot. Why don't you hit me with your best shot? Lol, sorry, had to do it.) He drew a card.

"Your Amazon Chain Master is weak." He drew a card. "Are you ready? Once Makyura the Destructor wipes out your pitiful Amazon Chain Master, you'll feel more pain along with your monster and I doubt you will recover this time. So if you want to survive this duel, I'd advise not to summon such weak monsters to the field."

He chuckled evilly and held up a card.

"So you think your Amazon Monster will stop me from wiping away your memories? Think again! I play the Vise Demon...Viser Des!" A strange monster appeared. It only had 500 attack points. (Look in Yugioh Duelist Manga 18 for a picture. It's too hard to describe. It's also not a real monster in the actual card game)

"It may not look like much, but observe. Although it has only 500 attack points, it can still stop your monster! Viser Des attack!" Amazon chain master's head was gripped by the small arch with twolarge screws that had points on each side on either side of the head.

"What on Earth?" Mai asked.

"You see, my Viser Des is invincible for three turns and its torture attack is brutal. It squeezes your head until your brain leaks out of your ears!"

"WHAT?!"

"Heh heh, taste the pain." The attack started squeezing Amazon's head. Mai screamed as the horrible pain hit her.

"MARIK! Stop this madness!" Yami yelled.

"MAI GET A GRIP!" Jounouchi yelled.

"CUT IT OUT, MARIK!" Kay commanded.

"Stop hurting her!" Yami commanded, the millennium eye glowing on his forehead.

"Heh, nobody can end this dark madness, not even you, phjaraoh. This woman will die when I win. Heh heh."

"You filthy..."

"Heh, that's right! HATE ME, PHARAOH! I am fueled by such emotions. They are what give me power. SHARE MY ANGER AND MY HATE!"

"You won't get away with this, Marik!"

"Yugi..." They looked at Mai. "thank you for trying to help, but this is my fight. I'm a duelist, and I'll fight him until the end."

"But Mai..." She shook her head weakly.

"Stay out of it." Jounouchi grabbed Yami by the shoulders and whirlled him around.

"Yugi, you're not really gonna sit here and let her keep fighting, are oyu?!"

"I am. Mai's made her decision."

"I sure hope it's the right one..."

"G-go, face-down card! It's my all-powerful Grave Arm..." Mai said, trying to speak without stuttering from her headache.

A hole appeared and a gruesome green claw jumped out.

"This magic card can bury one monster on the field..." Mai tried to swallow a lump in her throat and breathed heavilly.

"Heh heh, sorry. But my Viser Des is still invincible right now. Your magic effect won't work, my dear. Heh heh. Nice try." Mai smirked.

"Whoever said I was gonna use it on your monster? I have other plans."

"Huh? Go on."

I'm using its magic on my Amazon Chain Master. And since I'm destroying her, I'm not injured. And now her special ability kicks in."

"What special ability?!"

"Before my Amazon goes to the graveyard she lets me take a card from your deck." Amazon chain master twirled her gold chain.

"Really?" Marik asked, looking unterested by all this.

"Really. And the monster I'm taking is your Egyptian God Card; the Sun Dragon Ra."

"Awesome!"

"Way to go, Mai!" Jounouchi cheered. The chain hit Marik's deck and the card flew into Mai's hand.

"Yeah! Mai got Marik's card!"

"Isn't this great Onee-chan?" Adelinda asked. She blinked and stared at Kay. "Um, Kay?" She was silent, just staring.

"You don't look so tough without your Egyptian God Card, Marik. Too bad." He smirked.

"You may possess the Sun Dragon Rafor now, but the only way for oyu to keep it is by defeating me."

"Don't worry, I plan to. I just thought I'd take it for a little test-drive first."

"Intersting turn of events." Kay looked at Seto.

"You said it!" Mokuba said. "Now that Mai had the Sun Dragon Ra, she may win!" Kay frowned and looked back to the duel.

"Maybe, Mokuba..." she thought. "Maybe not."

#### Flashback

"URGH! Why can't I read this text?!" Pegasus cried, banging his fists to his desk. A younger Kay who appeared near 13 peeked into the room.

"Something the matter, Uncle?" she asked.

"I can't decipher the test I need for the Sun Dragon Ra! Osiris and Obelisk are done, but Ra...I cannot figure out this text." He stared at the cards in mad frustration.

"But aren't you getting rid of those cards?"

"Not until tomorrow. But I want to at least know what it says." Kay walked up to him and put a comforting hand on his shoulder."

"Cheer up, Unice. I'm sure-" Her eyes darted to the card. The heiroglyphs flashed through her mind and she gasped as she fell to her knees, grasping her head.

"Hm? Kay? What's wrong?" Pegasus asked, kneeling at his neice's side. "Answer me, Kay. What's wrong?"

"Urgh...j-just my head..." she murmured.

"Well, you should go and lay down. Come on." He led her out of the office.

#### End flashback

"For some reason I was connected to that card. I only glimpsed at it and I could feel its power. I could read that test on the card...but will Mai be able to?"

"It's my move!" Mai drew a card.

"Go on, everyone's waiting."

First I'll play two cards face down. And then I'll summon Amazon Fighter in attack mode." Her Amazon with 1500 attack points appeared.

"It's another weak Amazon? How sad." He drew a card. "I'll eliminate her with ease. I play one card face down and attack with Makyura the Destructor."

"Hold on! I activate Amazon Magician. This magic card swaps our monsters attack points. Take out Makyura!" Amazon Fighter attacked and Marik wined as he was slashed in the chest.

"Heh." His lifepoints fell to 1050.

"So much for Makyura. Thanks for playing."

"Yeah!"

"Marik's almost down to 1,000 lifepoints."

"Maybe Mai won't need Ra in this duel."

"Heh heh heh." Everyone stared at Marik. He looked up, eyes wide and manic. "A small price to pay to have you caught deep within my trap."

"A trap?"

"That's right. Reveal Card of Last Will."

"Card of Last Will?"

"Yes. It allow me to draw five new cards into my hand when one of my monster's attack points is decreased. I offer you my gratitude. Gaining five new cards isn't all you've allowed me to do. By destroying Makyura, you've activated its special ability. Now I'll play a card that will surely annihilate you!"

"Kay, what does he mean?" Adelinda asked.

"I'm not sure...but it can't be good."

"The trap card, Nightmare Wheel."

"Not another torture device!" Kay exclaimed. "If Mai is feeling the pain of her monsters, this card could..." She didn't let herself finish the sentence.

"It could kill her..." tori whispered.

"This is the end for you, AHAHAHAHAHAH!"

Yup, end chappie. I feel like making it three parts because this duel is that cool. Poor Mai...:'(

# 22 - Shadow Games Take a Whole New Level pt. 3

Marik snickered evilly, his face looking more distorted and evil.

"Not only does Nightmare Wheel trap your Amazon Fighter, it also will take 500 lifepoints from you each turn."

"No way!"

"And it's gonna hurt her too?" Honda yelled.

"He's nuts!" Duke cried.

"Miss Kujaku!" Shizuka yelled. "Don't give up, we know oyu can win this!" Kristen looked at Yami.

"Yugi, is there any hope that Mai can win?" He smiled reassuringly at her.

"Kristen, no matter how tough the situation is, there's always hope. Just believe in Mai, she's a great duelist. And she never gives up."

"Ah, right!" Kristen smiled and nodded.

"come on guys, let's make sure we yell so loud, Marik's little mind game can't possible work!" Tori yelled.

"GO MAI!" almost everyone cheered. She smiled in amusement.

"Thanks guys..." Her expression grew serious and she glared up at Marik. "I was expecting something I couldn't handle."

"Pardon?" Marik frowned.

"I thought you'd try something like this, Marik, so I play this card: Dramatic Rescue." The trap card flipped up.

(NOTE: in the English dub, they call it Rescue Operation and it looks different than the card in the manga, but I like the manga card more so just pointing it out.)

"This trap card allows me to rescue my Amazon Fighter from your trap. It also lets me summon a new monster to the field now."

"Do you know what this means?" Mokuba asked.

"Onee-san?" Adelinda asked.

"Just watch, Addy." Kay smiled. "Miss Kujaku is playing this game very well and you may learn something from watching."

"Hm..." Adelinda turned her attention back to the arena.

"So, are you going to summon the Egyptian God Card you took form me?"

"Of course not! I ppaid attention the last time it was played and I know that if I summoned it now without sacrificing any monsters first it would have zero attack points. But not to worry, I'll play that Sun Dragon by the end of my next turn."

"Is she crazy?" Jounouchi asked, staring up at her. "How's she ever gonna pull that off, Yugi?"

"But first things first. Amazon Fighter, return to my hand now." amazon Fighter was freed fromthe Nightmare wheel and vanished and Mai put the card in her hand. "And now to summon a new monster."

Her hand consisted of the Sun Dragon Ra, Amazon Fighter, and Cyber Harpy.

"Ah, this ought to do." She placed a card on the duel disk. "I summon Cyber Harpy."

"Yeah!" Jounouchi cheered. "Mai's favorite!"

"All she needs is that Magic card and she can summon Ra!" Adelinda exclaimed.

"Mai is awesome!!" Tori cheered.

"She's totally gonna win!" Kristen said. Kay smiled but there was something that was troubling her, and she did not know what. Probably nothing.

"Now I just need one card. Let's hope this is it!" Mai drew a card. She smiled. "I play Graceful Charity now! A magic card that allows me to draw three new cards from my deck and then I discard two from my hand."

Mai drew three cards and discarded two.

"Oh, I am so good."

"Hm?" Marik said. Kay smirked.

"She drew that card."

"Ready, Marik? I play the magic card Elegant Egotist. And now Elegant Egotsit shall turn my one Cyber Harpy into 3! Let's give a big, Battle City 'hello' to the Harpy Lady sisters!"

Three Harpy Ladies stood on the field. One had long pink hair, that other fiarly long and spiked up blue hair, and the final orangish blonde hair.

"She got three monsters! She did it!" Jounouchi exclaimed happily, posing in victory. Cat and Kristen giggled, Honda, Tori, and Duke rolled their eyes.

"And now I'll sacrifice these three lovely ladies and summon the Sun Dragon Ra!"

A huge cyclone flew up to the sky after the Harpy Ladies vanished and the wind it excelled was powerful. Mai held up the card.

"The Sun Dragon Ra is now in my control!" She played it on her duel disk. A bright light glowed up in the dark sky like the sun and illuminated the stage. Marik was smirking maliciously and the millennium symbol glowed on his forehead.

The light started to vanish so you could see the monster. Mai blinked.

"what in the world is that thing?" A golden sphere floated above them and radiated an orange glow.

"The Winged Dragon of Ra is locked in that sphere! "

"Hm? No way!" Seto exclaimed. Kay shot her usual glare at him and looked back on the stage. Suddenly, it hit her again.

"she can't read the text!" Everoyne stared at her.

"What are ya talking about?" Jounouchi asked. Kay bit her lip.

"The ancient text..."

"Kay, what do you mean?" Honda asked.

"Yeah, what text?" Duke added. Seto peered at her through the corner of his eye.

"But how can I use it?" Mai asked.

"Now that you've stolen my Egyptian God Card, why don't you try to use it against me?" Marik aksed, snickering. Kay groaned a bit.

"this is not good."

"Kay, will you please explain yourself?" Jounouchi snapped, growing impatient with her.

"Just wait and see."

"Only I know how to tap the power of the Sun Dragon Ra. I told you this isn't a mere duel, and I'm sure the pain and suffering my torture cards have caused you made that obvious. We're playing a shadow game with ancient magic beyond your understanding. Once you lose tihs battle to me, you will be dead!"

"DEAD?!" Jounouchi cried.

"He can't be serious!" Shizuka cried.

"Mai!" Anzu yelled.

"Now as for my Egyptian God card, you were a fool to think you'd be able to use it. Only individuals with knowledge of the ancient scriptures can weild the power of Ra."

"Give me a break! You're just jealous because you lost your Egyptian God card to a better duelist, and I'm gonna use it to knock you out of the finals, bud! Your Winged Dragon answers to me now."

"Then why don't you try reading the ancient text written on the bottom of the card?" Marik asked. Everyone gasped.

"ancient text?" Jounouchi turned to look at Kay.

"Is that what you meant?" She nodded.

"Yes."

"But can Mai read it?" Kristen asked.

"Let's pray she can, otherwise she cannot use the Sun Dragon Ra."

Mai looked at her duel disk. "Huh? What's that?" she asked. There were Heiroglyphs on the bottom of the card.

"That is the ancient text used to call upon the hideen powers of the Sun God Ra!" Marik laughed. "Well, why don't you try reading the chant? Or perhaps you're in need of a lesson in the ancient Egyptian scriptures, my dear. Well, why don't I read the chant and regain control of it?"

"I was afraid of this!" Kay exclaimed.

"No, come on Mai!" Jounouchi yelled.

"If Marik reads that text and takes back Ra, it's over." Anzu winced slightly in fear. "And Mai will lose the duel."

"There's far more at stake than just this duel..." Yami murmured bitterly.

"Can't we do something?" Cat asked.

"I think it's too late..."

"Hey Seto, what do you think it says?" Mokuba asked.

"Let's see. Photograph the card with our satellite camera and use the onboard network to translate it

now."

"Awesome idea, Seto. I'll get on it right away." Mokuba ran off.

"Stare at that card all you want. You'll never decipher the ancient words printed upon it. It's written in a special form of Heiroglyphic script used only by high-ranking individuals in Egypt and I doubt *you* fit that category. However, my family does. They guard the Pharaoh's tomb."

"Whatever!" Jounouchi said, tired of hearing Marik rant.

"I'll bet Kaiba could read it."

"Hmm? What's he mean?" Kay looked at Seto.

"In fact, several people on this vessel can trace their history back to ancient Egypt, be it a family tree or reincarnation, either way, they are related to the past in some way. Kaiba nad Yugi are the two obvious ones, along with me and my sister, Ishizu. But let's not forget the two other women, Cat and Kay."

"What?" Cat asked.

"You both were there. Soi you two should be able to possess the power to control a God Card and read the text on that card."

"Blah, blah, blah. I don't need a history lesson to learn how to control the actions of my duel monster."

"Pegasus J. Crawford certainly did and not even he knew how to decipher the ancient text when he created the card." Kay gasped a bit and her eyes widened slightly. "But he knew that in ancient times the Sun Dragon Ra would only obey those who chanted the words. So, Pegasus printed the words in an ink that can only be seen when the monster is summoned.

"I'll ask you again, are you reading the chant? Or shall I release the Sun Dragon Ra? This is your last chance, foolish girl. Show me how you control an Egyptian God." He laughed, big surprise.

"What does he find so dang funny?" Kristen asked. Kay shrugged.

"Beats me."

"Laugh it up, psycho boy."

"Be careful!" Yami warned.

"Aw man, with no other monsters on the field, if Mai gets attacked by that Sun Dragon Ra, it's over!"

"Time is running out, my dear. So, make your move! Unless you're willing to admit defeat. Remember, you have no monsters on the field to protect you. And that means I can use my Egyptian God Card to attack your life points! So, prepare to die!

"This is your final oppertunity to awaken the Sun Dragon Ra."

"I place once card facedown and end my turn." Everyone either made a type of moan or sigh in sadness. It was all over.

"Marik can take back his card..."

"Poor Mai..." Shizuka whispered.

"She fought a great duel..."

"No! I know Mai will get herself out of this mess, I know it!"

"Jounouchi, I'm all for hoping and being optimistic, but I don't think Mai can get out of this. She's done, you have to accept it." Jounouchi growled.

"No, she can't lose!"

"It's over." Marik drew a card. "I summon Viser Shock!" He summoned an odd monster, similar to Viser Des.

"another torture card?" Kay asked.

"Too bad, say goodbye to your facedown. When Viser Shock is summoned, your face down card is automatically destroyed."

"What?!" Mai's Gravity Bind shattered. "That was my last hope..."

"Mai!"

"And not only that." Marik snickered. "Let the suffering bing and engulf you. Now, Viser Des and Viser Shock, begin the execution!"

Mai was chained by the monsters which combined to form a large and powerful torture device. She gasped and it released a powerful charge of electricity.

"No card can save you, Mai Kujaku. Now, SUFFER!"

"AAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHH!"

"MAI!!!!" Jounouchi yelled.

"She's trapped by those two torture monsters!" Her lifepoints fell from 2100 to 800. Her head drooped in exhaust from the power of the attack. She moaned in pain.

"Mai, are you alright?" Jounouchi yelled. Marik laughed.

"Curse you, Marik!"

"HAHAHA! Yugi, this woman walks on the brink of death! Her pain is proof that she's still just alive." He snickered. "It's time to awaken the Sun Dragon Ra by reciting the ancient chant and reclaiming my great beast so I can finish this duel once and for all!"

"Poor Mai..." Cat whispered, biting her lip. Marik crossed his arms in front of his chest.

"Great beast of the sky, please hear my cry. Transform myself from orb of light and bring me victory in this fight."

"Hey, check it out, guys!" Jounocuhi pointed up at Ra. Light began to disperse in powerful beams from the orb.

"Marik's chant is awakening the Egyptian God monster!" The orb started to open. "Now the best belongs to him again!" The bowed creature began to unfold and it gave off more shining light, truly as bright as the sun.

Its foot forms along with parts of its wings and Mairk continued the chant.

"Envelope the deserts with your glow and cast your rage upon my foe. Unlock your powers from deep within so that together we may win." Ra glowed so bright, it was hard to make out what it looked like. "Appear in this shadow game as I call your name," Marik threw out his arms, "Sun Dragon Ra!"

The light finally wekened and a magnificient golden dragon with red eyes and a blue gem on its forehead roared. It was amazing, a truly divine creature. Win and light expelled from the monster.

"There it is!" Seto yelled. Kay stared in amazement.

"So that's it...the Sun Dragon..."

"Behold, my great beast! The most powerful of all the Egyptian God Monsters." Ra landed behind Marik, perched and ready to attack. "It's time now to end this duel." He laughed. Ra had 5400 attack points.

"Just hang in there, Mai!"

"Jounouchi please stop. It's useless to cheer anymore."

"No way! I'm standing by Mai until the end!"

"I hate to say it, but the end is near." Kristen frowned.

"Tori!"

"Ki-Ki, there's no denial of that, and we all know it." Marik chuckled.

"Such a pity it has to end like this, my dear."

"No..."

"As soon as my monster attacks, your body will no longer be able to withstand this and you will finally die."

"That's enough!" Yami snarled. "Leave Mai alone! Your grudge is against me, not her, Marik."

"That's true, pharaoh, but I'm just having a little fun up here."

"Define fun!" Kay yelled.

"There's nothing I like more than killing off a weak mortal through endless torture and increasing my strength."

"Marik!"

"Heh, don't worry, we'll face each other soon. It's something I've been waiting for since my family insisted I bare the ancient scriptures on my back. Cursed to carry the secret of the Pharaoh's power until his return."

"The Pharaoh's secret?"

"And although this duty has brought great honor to the Ishtar name, it has brought me nothing but great suffering and despair. For generations, my family has waited hopelessly for the Pharaoh's return." He laughed...again. "Except for me!

"Serving the ancient Pharaoh is a game for fools. Giving up my life just to paly servant to a 5,000-year-old king, when all along / hold the key to his great power. I shall become the king! lalways knew I was destined for greatness. I just need to collect all the right pieces so I can put my destiny together."

"He sure likes to hear himself talk..." Tori muttered.

"This madness has to stop, understand?" Yami snapped. "Right now!" And Marik, you guessed it, laughed.

"This madness has just begun! Tormenting your little friend is merely practice. For soon, you shall suffer!" And he laughs yet again. Geez, what the heck is so funny to him? "While the world finally cowers in fear before me! This shadow game is over." HE LAUGHS AGAIN! "The time has come to kill you."

Jounouchi ran toward the dueling stage.

"No! Jounouchi!"

"What's he doing?" Cat asked. Kay watched him.

"Something he shouldn't be doing." "Hey ref! Pull the plug on this duel!" he commanded. "That's in violation of Battle City rules." "Then I'm doing it for you!" "You'll be disqualified!" "Big deal." "Jounouchi, are you nuts?" Kristen yelled. "Get down from them before you get disqualified!" Tori yelled. She sighed and slapped her forehead. "I swear, does he even Isiten?" "Sun dragon Ra, direst attack!" Marik commanded. Ra roared and the energy of its attack began to build. "This is it, guys!" Kay said. "This duel is as good as done." "Look out, Mai!" Anzu and Shizuka yelled. "Farewell." "Hey Mai!" Jounouchi ran up to her. "I'll get you out of this. "Katsuya!" Shizuka yelled. "What is he doing?!" Honda cried. Mai snapped out of her weakness. "Move it, Jounouchi, or you're gonna get hit! There's no way out of this thing." "Shut up! There's no way I'm going to watch my friend get killed." He tried to free her, but realized it was impossible. "Rats, it won't budge!" He could sense Ra's attack forming behind him and drawing closer to its target. The light glowed around them and it was like a fire was behind them. "You need to get out of here, Jounouchi! you have a duel to fight in the next round!"

"I don't care!"

"Don't throw your life away!"

"Look I'm staying right here!" Her expression softened.

"Thank you." The blast drew closer.

"Hang in there. You're gonna be OK, Mai. I promise, and I never break a promise to a friend." Yami jumped up onto the stage and in front of Jounouchi and Mai, his back to the attack.

"That's enough!"

"Yugi!" Jounouchi and Mai exclaimed.

"Is he crazy?!" Kristen shrieked. Marik laughed.

"Well isn't that special? It appears I'll be able to destroy Yugi even sooner than I thought I would." Yami turned his head slightly so he could see Marik and grunted with the struggle of holding back Ra's full-force attack.

"Not quite! Your dark shadow powers will never penetrate me! I will shield everyone from your evil!"

"Heh heh heh heh heh heh. I doubt it. Nothing can withstand the unstoppable force of the greatest creature to ever walk the Earth. The Sun Dragon Ra! All three of you are finished!"

The blast finally subsided.

"Yugi!" Yami collapsed. Jounouchi ran from Mai to the side of Yami.

"Oh no!"

"Yugi! Help him!!" Honda commanded.

"Please get up!" Anzu screamed.

"No, please be ok, Yami!" Cat cried.

"Kaiba, he needs helps!" Kay shrilled.

"Don't worry, Yug, you're gonna be alright."

"Heh, that's what you think, fool, but I'm afraid that I beg to differ. looks like I've won this duel." Cat jumped onto the arean and ran to Yami's side.

"Yami, are you OK? Say something, please!" She cradled him in her arms, gently nudging him to try and snap him out of it. Marik looked at Roland.

"I'm waiting, her life points are gone so announce me as the winner immediately." Roland raised an arm.

"The winner of this duel is Mr. Marik Ishtar." The fog of the shadow game vanished.

"Let's check the damage and cause some more." (I confess, that is a damn awesome line)

"Yugi, come on, get up pal!" Jounouchi said. Mai was finally freed from the Viser Des and Viser Shock grips and fell so her knees.

"What do we have here?" Marik asked. He smirked and held his millennium rods then pulled the top half out, revealing a long knife and he aimed it Yami. (I am not making that up, it really is in the manga and it is hardcore, dude...bad, but hardcore) "Shall I tear him apart right here and now?" he asked maniacally.

"You wish!"

"Relax, I still need him." Cat glared up at Marik, her blue eyes shining with an anger that was unlike her normal character. "I'll simply kill him in a duel in the ultimate shadow game!"

Jounouchi felt his body stiffen up and was horrified when he realized her couldn't move.

"Jounouchi?" Cat asked.

"Katsuya, what's wrong?" Shizuka yelled.

"Perhaps next time you'll tihnk before you enter a duel uninvited."

"Jounouchi! What did you do to him, Marik?" Mai snapped. He squatted in front of her.

"Not to worry, he'll be fine. But there's something we need to discuss. You still have my Egyptian God card in your deck and I want it back. Keh heh heh. You're lucky you got away with your life but you'll regret it." He smirked. "You'll wish you had died her painlessly instead. The loser of a shadow game must be **penalized**.

"what?"

"I'll go into your mind and find a suitable punishment." He aimed his millennium rod at her. "Penalty game!"

"Where am I?" Mai opened her eyes and realized she was in a giant hourglass floating above a beach setting.

"we are in a space deep within your mind, Mai Kujaku. Here you will be tortured until you finally die, once and for all. And no friends to help you." He snickered. "But, since I'm a nice guy, I'll let you see them one more time. Look below you."

"Huh?" She looked down.

"Watch out guys, 'cause here we come!" Jounouchi ran towards the water, holding Shizuka's hand. Anzu and Yugi waved toward them, Duke floated in an innertubr and Honda had a snorkling mask and goggles on. Kay and Tori were soaking up some sun and Cat and Kristen were collecting shells. They smiled and waved at everyone.

"They seem to be having fun." Mai looked at Marik. "And they don't miss you at all. And now you will die all alone."

"No...you can't do this..."

"Heh heh, I can and will. You should be happy I even showed you your friends for a final time. I could have simply allowed oyu to sit here and die without so much as a word."

"Please...don't..."

"Too late. When I remove my Ra cardthe brain insects from above will falland slowly devour your soft tissue. You will be dead in no longer than 48 hours. So good night, I'm taking my card back."

Marik swiped his card. She screamed as the horrible bugs fell on her and already looked to eat her flesh.

Mai collapsed on the floor of the arena, her eyes open and completely blank.

"Mai!" Jounouchi was finally able to move. "Tell me what you did to her now, Marik!"

"Your firend made a costly mistake by dueling against me. And now, within the next 48 hours, she will die!"

# (NOTE: It was actually 24, but I always felt the finals were longer than that so I upped it by 24 hours)

"That's it, Marik, now you've gone too far! So, it's go time. Now put em up, cowboy!"

"Fool, threaten me again and meet the same fate as your friend."

"Jounouchi, you idiot! fighting won't help you now!" Kay yelled.

"Katsuya, please calm down!" Shizuka begged. Cat nodded, still holding Yami in her arms.

"Your sister is right, Jounouchi. Don't do something stupid." Marik walked away. Kay, Kristen, and Tori jumped onto the arena.

"We have to get Mai out of here." Honda ran up to her.

"come on, Mai, snap out of it!"

"Yugi, you gotta get up!" Anzu said.

"Hey, he's waking up!" Cat exclaimed. Everyone looked at him. Yami grunted as he tried to get up.

"Yugi, you alright?" Kay asked.

"Don't worry, I'm fine. But are you and Mai okay, Jounouchi?" he asked.

"I'm fine, but Mai's not doing so well. Marik pulled something freaky with that Millennium Rod. He said she'll die in 48 hours."

"Seto, come in."

"Proceed." Adelinda, who Kay instructed to stay next to Seto, looked up at him.

"I have an update. There's more written on this card than just that chant. I'll decode the text right now."

"OK, good work. We need to find out all the secrets of this card." He looked up. "Alright, you geeks. Clear the field, the duels are done and there's no reason for anyone to be standing there and wasting time."

"Kaiba..."

"Save it! I don't have time to deal with all of you." He started to walk away. Adelinda watched him. Kay noticed her face.

"Yo Kaiba!"

"What now?"

"Take Adelinda with you."

"Hmph, why should I babysit *your* little sister?" he asked coldly. Kay rolled her eyes.

"Just shut up. She wants to hang out with Mokauba." Seto looked at Adelinda who had a pink tint in her face and was staring at her feet. "And besides, I need to help with Mai and it would be best if she's with Mokuba." Kay smiled at Adelinda gently. "Well, Kaiba?"

"Whatever."

"Thank you, Kaiba-sama." Adelinda bowed. Seto shrugged.

"Come on, then." He started walking.

"Right!" she ran after him. Kay smiled and then focused her attention to Mai.

"Honda, can you take her to her room?"

"Noproblem, help her onto my back."

"OK." They hoisted Mai onto Honada's back and he took off. Only Yami and Cat remained.

"Yami?"

"Yes, Cat."

"Please be more careful from now on." He looked at her in surprise. "It's just...when you got in front of that attack from Ra and passed out, I was so afraid you were...dead. And we all need you, Yami. Nobody else can stop Marik." He smiled and put his hands on her shoulders.

"Don't worry, Cat. I swear it will all work out, you'll see. I'll defeat Marik and Mai will be fine."

"Alright..."

"Come on, let's get going." She nodded and they walked after the rest of the gang.

Well, that ends Mai's duel... \*Collapses in exhaustion\* The next chapter will probably be A LOT shorter. I'm kinda scared I made Cat sound too Anzu-ish in this chapter. I hope I didn't. Well, ocmment me, tell me if ya liked it.

## 23 - The Ancient Text

Seto and Adelinda entered the computer terminal where mokuba was busy translating the text on the Sun God Ra card.

"Mokuba, have you been able to translate all the test on the Sun Dragon Ra yet?" Seto asked, Adelinda close to his side. Mokuba away from the screen at them.

"I'm pretty close, but for some reason the network mainframe is still having trouble with the last few words." Adelind astood at Mokuba's left and Seto stood at his right. He smiled at her and she smiled back.

"Let's have a look."

"Right." Mokuba typed something and the image of the God Card appeared onscren, blown up so the text was easier to see. Seto's eyes widened.

"Ugh. Wait! This can't be!" Adleind alooked at him.

"Kaiba-sama?" she asked, concern on her face.

"I can read it!" Mokuba stared at him.

"You what?" Seto gaped at the screen.

"That Egyptian text is completely clear to me. I can read that paragraph as if it were written in Japanese or English. But I've never seen that language before in my life."

"Mokuba, is Kaiba-sama OK?" Adelinda asked worriedly.

"I don't know, Addy-chan. Hey Seto, are you ok? Nii-sama?" Mokuba asked, waving a hand in front of his face.

"Someone's toying with my mind. I'm not some ancient magician, I'm the CEO of Kaiba Corp." Seto fell to his knees.

"Hey Nii-san! Are oyu OK?" mopkuba asked. Adelinda ran over to him and gently took hold of one of his arms.

"Kaiba-sama, please say something."

"Seto!" Mouba said. Seto's face was still in shock. He placed one hand over his face and was breathing hard. "Seto?!" He shook it off.

"I'm fine..." he mumbled. Adelinda put a hand on his forehead to check.

"You sure? You feel feverish."

"I just got a shock." He pat her head. "Don't worry." And Seto stood up. Mokuba sighed with relief.

"Well that's good." Adelinda nodded.

"Yeah."

"Mokuba, why don't oyu take a break. I'll handle it from here."

"Uh, you sure?" Mokuba asked. Seto nodded. "OK. Hey Adelinda, want to check out some of the games I brought for my handheld?"

"OK." Mokuba ran off with her to get his handheld game console. Seto took a seat and stared at the monitor, a frown on his face.

~\*~

"Attention duelists. Round one of the Battle City finals is now complete!" Roland announced. "The four remaining finalists are Yugi, Kaiba, Kay, and Marik. The competition will resume tomorrow when we land at our next dueling sight!" Roland announced over the PA system.

"Guess we're not dueling on the blimp anymore." Jounouchi looked at Yugi.

"Oh well, I was getting airsick anyway. I used up three barf bags." Kay grimaced.

"OK, Jounouchi, a little too much information there." Kristen nodded.

"I have to agree with Kay-chan on this one, Jounouchi." He shrugged.

"Hey, I don't like keeping secrets."

"You also don't like keeping that big yap of yours closed." Everyone laughed a bit, except for Jounouchi.

"Yeah, yeah, yuck it up, Kay. One of these days I'm gonna be the champion of one of the fancy schmancy tournaments." Kay put her hands on her hips.

"That's a lot of talk coming from someone who recently lost a duel in only ten minutes or so to Kaiba." Jounouchi winced and stuck his tongue out at her.

"He played the Egyptian God card, what I suppossed to do?"

"I don't know, find a way to crush it like a bug?" Kay offered, rolling her eyes.

"Watch it!" Cat stepped between them.

"Come on guys, stop bickering."

"Cat is right." Honda nodded. "We should go check up on Mai."

"Oh yeah, I almost forgot. Let's go guys."

"Actually," they looked at Kay, "I don't really want to go."

"Huh? Why not?" Jounouchi asked, voice sounding a little testy.

"Yeah Kay, don't you want to be there for support?" Yugi asked.

"Look, I have somewhere else to be, ok? I'll visit Mai later."

"What's so important that you can't be there like a real friend?" Jounouchi demanded.

"Easy, man."

"No, Honda. I'm tired of her thinking she's so high and mighty and turning her back on us. Why, she's no better than Kaiba!" Kay glared.

"Watch what you say, mutt."

"Ya see?"

"LOOK!" She grabbed him by the collar of his shirt. "I'm just as angry as you are about what Marik did to Mai, but I have another friend in trouble. In case you've forgotten, let me give you a hint. It's Odion! And he might be in more trouble than Mai right now so put a lid on it or prepare to get a nice kick in the crotch." she released his shirt and stormed off.

"Dude, I think you really screwed up." Duke nodded.

"I'll say, she was even angrier than usual."

"do you think Kay will be ok?" Kristen asked. Tori and Alex nodded.

"You kidding?" Tori asked.

"She just needs a little time and she'll cool off."

"Let's go and visit Mai now."

"You're right, Cat." They walked off.

Kay walked into the room with Odion and noticed it was empty. Odion was sitll passed out. Kay sighed and walked over to him.

"I'm sorry this had to happen Odion." She bit her lip and took hold of his hand. "Why did Marik have to do this to you, Odion?" she cried, tears starting to run down her face. "You were always so nice, Odion, and Ishizu told me about your childhood." Sheburied her face in her hands and started to cry for her friends.

It just wasn't fair!

Kay didn't leave Odion for a while. Her eyes were red an dpuffy when she finally left. She went to her room and noticed that Alex, and Kristen were back and asleep. Tori and Cat had been able to get another room along with Shizuka and Anzu,

She took off her jacket and shoes and put her hair in a braid. With a small hiccup left over form her sobs, Kay crawled into bed and started to fall asleep.

It grew dark and after a few hours, Kay opened her eyes agiana nd sat up with a yanw. She noticed Adelinda wa snot in the room, despite the darkness and instantly grew worried.

"Where is she?" She looked at the clock and it was 1:27 am. Kay sighed and pulled her hair out of its braid then pinned it up in a messy bun and put on some socks before going out into the hall.

It was dark but some extra lights lined the floor so you could see where you were going.

She heard the roar of the engine and descended carefully into the darkness. And what was creepy was she thought she could hear monsters roaring, but that was surely crazy.

Kay peeked into Yugi's, Jounouchi's, Mai's, Ishizu's, and the extra rooms, but no sign of Adelinda. She even looked in Kaiba's room. Although she didn't know where Adelinda was, she decided to play a little prank and sprayed some of his clothes with her perfume, Eu de toilette Japanese Cherry Blossom, that she ran back to her room to get.

"Hee hee, I love being me." (I do that to Alex sometimes, HA! He hates it) She returned the perfume to her bag, taking care to hide it, and then continued down the hall.

Finally, she came to another room and walked in, seeing Kaiba typing like mad on his computer. He stopped to look at her for a moment and then went back to work.

"Shouldn't you be in bed?" he asked. She crossed her arms.

"Shouldn't you?" she asked. He rolled his eyes. "What on Earth are you doing?" she demanded.

"Not that it's any of your buisiness, but I'm translating the text of the Sun Dragon Ra." Kay walked to his side and looked at the screen.

"Pfft, can't you read it?"

"Don't bluff."

"You think I can't read it?"

"I doubt you could if Pegasus couldn't." Kay raised an eyebrow. Seto shrugged. "It doesn't matter. Ra will be in my deck along with Osiris and Obelisk and then I will crush any duelist who stands against me."

"Geez, Kaiba, could you give that speech a rest already?"

"Why are you here?" he asked.

"I'm looking for Adelinda."

"She and Mokuba have been hanging out in here and they fell asleep." She gestured with his head and Adelinda and Mokuba were laying together on their chair, covered with Seto's trench coat. Kay smiled.

"Aw, how sweet."

"I guess."

"Do you even have a heart?" Kay asked dryly. "I'm starting to doubt it."

"Who are you to judge?"

"I should ask you the same thing." He glared at her. Kay leaned against his chair and watched the screen.

"Having fun?" he asked sarcastically. She yawned.

"No, not really."

"You don't have to stay here."

"I'm awake, I might as well." Seto shrugged and continued typing.

"Suit yourself." Kay leaned against his head and he looked at her.

"You should go to sleep. You already translated the card."

"Not entirely. There's still mor ework to d-" she sighed and put a hand over his.

"You won't duel well tomorrow without some sleep. And I want at least a little bit of a chellenge should I face you." Seto stared at her hand on his for a second and pulled it away.

"Heh, it's funny to hear you as if you have authority over me."

"Please, women always know what's best." She ruffled his hair and Seto winced. "Especially for stubborn boys like you."

"Hey, cut that out!" mokuba woke up and rubbed his eyes.

"Huh? Seto..." Kay looked at him and Mokuba snapped out of his tired daze. "Seto, Kay, what are oyu two doing up? You both need some sleep. There's another round of finals tomorrow." Kay nodded.

"That's what I was trying to tell him but nooooo. Don't listen to the clearly smarter, soon-to-be-champion." Seto smoothed his hair and glared at her.

"Would you shut up? And I'm aware of the finals tomorrow, Mokuba. That's exactly what I'm preparing for. we're currently on course for Kaiba Corp. island. This is where the finals will end and the Champion will be crowne.d"

At this point, Seto took his trench coat and put it on and was followed out of the room by Kay, Mokuba, and Adelinda (who just woke up) to look out ahead where the blimp was being controlled.

"It's a fitting place for my victory and soon we will arrive at the very sight where our stepfather was last seen after I took over the corporation and left him with nothing." Kay stared.

"Their stepfather?" she wondered.

"The tower I built symbolizing the new era of Kaiba Corp. I changed it from a weapons company to a gaming company and that tower sitll stands as a reminder of my power. Mokuba."

"Huh?"

"Now do you understand why I've chosen this island for the conclusion of the finals? Because I'm finally ready to return to the land where our stepfather made his billions, for now, I too have built a mighty empire," Kay and Adelinda exchanged glances at this part of the rant, "and I've done it all on my own terms. And that's just how I'll win this tournament. With no help from anyone except for myself.

"It won't be long now, Mokuba before I prove to the entire world that there is no one on Earth who is superious to me!" He turned na dlooked at Kay. "And I'll knock down anyone in my way, and that means oyu, Yugi, and Marik." Kay smirked and walked up to him.

"Well, hon, I hope you don't get your hopes up too high, because I'm gonna send you spiraling right back down." Seto also smirked.

"Then bring it on."

"Fine, I will." She turned and walked away. "Come on, Adelinda.

"Ah, right." She followed her.

"Heh, as if she stands a chance." how to comment on that.	Mokuba looked up at Seto	and then afte rKay and Ade	elinda, not sure

## 24 - The Duel Tower

Hey guys, I'm skipping Noa's virtual world because I'm really unfamiliar with it and I don't like using Yugioh Enter the Fans to write my story. The sound is kinda sketchy sometimes. So bear with me, you can imagine it happened but I'm not writing it.

Kay and Adelinda returned to Seto and Mokuba after getting dressed. Kay had her hair up in a messy bun instead of a pullback and Adelinda stood at her side in her denim jacket, white T-shirt with a sequin star on it, blue jeans, and tennis shoes. Mokuba smiled at them.

"Hi guys."

"Hey Mokuba." Suddenly, Roland came on over the PA system.

"Attention duelists! We are now approaching KaibaCorp Island for the conclusion of the Battle City finals." Seot ignored Kay and Adelinda.

"This is it, Mokuba." Mokuba looked up at him. Kay rolled her eyes.

"And here we go, another long, and winded speech."

"There are only four finalists left, including myself. And before long, I will be crowned the world's greatest duelist on top of my Duel Tower. Plus, I'll have the most powerful deck in Duel Monsters once I win the three Egyptian God cards."

He smirked.

"When I defeat Marik, I'll get his Sun Dragon Ra, which seems to be the most powerful of the three Egyptian God Cards. Then I'll gain Osiris the Heaven Dragon when I wipe out Yugi." He held up Obelisk and looked at it. "And since I already possess the mighty God of the Obelisk, my deck will be completely unstoppable." He POSED! (Yes, he really did pose) "and then I'll be respected and feared by every duelist on Earth." He clenched his fist.

"Not again." (YES! He said that! I laughed my head off. Cute little Mokie.)

Seto narrowed his eyes. "And now it's only a matter of time before the winner takes all." (Dun...dun...DUN!!!) Kay sighed.

"Wow...just wow..."

"Those speeches do get a little old..." Adelinda whispered with a small giggle.

"And poor Mokie is stuck listening to him." Adelinda laughed and Mokuba smiled a bit. Seto glared at

her.

"Shut up, Kay."

Roland came over the PA again. "Attention duelists, we're six miles from KaibaCorp. Island. Preparing for descent."

"Cool!" Adelinda smiled. Kay grinned and pat her on the hea.d

"Yup, only six miles away from me winning this tournament." Seto snickered.

"Doubtful."

"Oh yeah? Why don't you save the big talk for our duel, Kaiba? Then I'll show you some real skills."

"You may have beaten Odion and advanced this far but there's no way you can match my superior skill. Pegasus could give you any card and it still wouldn't be enough."

"Keep telling yourself that."

"Guys, c'mon, don't fight."

"We're now beginning our descent upon KaibaCorp. Island for the conclusion of the Battle City Finals! When we touch down, please exit the aircraft and await further instructions!"

"C'mon, Adelinda. Let's go find the others."

"OK." They ran out to meet up with Yugi and the gang in the hall.

"Hey guys!" They stopped and smiled.

"morning Kay."

"So, Yugi, ready to duel? 'Cause I'm here to win it."

"Well, I'll look forward to dueling you." Kay smiled and nodded.

"So, how's Mai? Any better?" They shook their heads.

"Nope."

"aw, well, don't you worry Jounouchi. I'll duel Marik in your honor and get Mai back." He looked at her in surprise.

"Seriously?"

"Sure! Besides, I want to beat that evil freak anyway. He laughs too much." Kristen nodded.

"That he does!"

"Well, I'm sure you'll both do great." Cat smiled.

"Thanks Cat." The aircraft landed and the doors opened.

"C'mon, guys. I'm sick of being stuck in this oversized hunk of metal." Tori raced down the stairs and was followed by Yugi, Kay, Adelinda, Kristen, Cat, Jounouchi, Honda, Duke, and Anzu.

"Wow, what a dump..." Kay mumbled. The entire island was covered in debris from what looked like old buildings. The only thing standing was a huge tower of some sort in the center of it all.

"Check it out, guys!" Yugi exclaimed, violet eyes wide with wonder.

"That must be the Duel Tower Kaiba was yapping about. Now what?" Jounouchi asked, his arms crossed, abored expression on his face.

"I'm sure we'll find out soon enough."

"Whoa...even I have to admit that's impressive." Tori and Kristen nodded.

"Yup." alex walked out and stood next to them.

"Hey sleepyhead." Tori grinned. Alex rubbed her eyes.

"You guys know my body doesn't begin the function until one, right?" Kay smiled and rolled her eyes a bit.

"you'll just have to deal, Alex. Unless you want to miss the finals." Suddenly, she was wide awake.

"Heck no! We're here to cheer you to victory, Kay!"

"Yeah!" Kristen and Tori agreed. She smiled.

"Thanks. I'm planning on winning." Seto walked over to them.

"Look, the island we're standing on is the site of the original Kaiba Corporation. But I tore it down."

"Does he have some serious anger issues or what?" Kay whispered. Yugi turned to look at Seto.

"And is that-"

"Yes. That's my Duel Tower," Seto pointed up at it, "and I plan to defeat you at the very top, Yugi."

"If you can beat Kay, you chump!" Alex snapped. Seto ignored her. Yugi's puzzle glowed and Yami appeared. Jounouchi pointed an accusing finger at Seto.

"Look, rich boy, in case you forgot I was in this tournament too! And you ain't that big a deal so if you think you can win-"

"Must you insist on embarrassing yourself, Jounouchi? In case you've forgotten, I beat you in under ten minutes, mutt!" Kay bit her lip to fight laughter as Jounouchi sulked a little.

"Oh yeah..." He glared. "But that was only because you played that God Card, Kaiba!"

"True, but I could have played just about anything and still defeat you, ameteur." Jounouchi glared.

"Hey, why don't we settle this with fists, not cards."

"Jounouchi!" Cat cried, but he was already charging. Seto sighed and moved out of the way easilly, causing Jounouchi to trip over something and fall flat on his face.

"Pathertic."

"Hey, Jounouchi!" Honda ran over and helped him up.

"you ok, man?"

"I'm cool...I'm cool..."

"yo, Kaiba." He looked at Kay. "Heh, I'm not planning on losing to you. Ya might have beaten Jounouchi, but I've got some tricks you haven't even seen yet."

"Is that so?"

"Yes! And I'm knocking you right off that tower and becoming the Queen of the Games."

"Queen?"

"King is being sexist." Seto shrugged.

"Whatever. We're wasting time, so let's go." He led them towards the tower. Kay watched him, frowning.

"Wait til I beat him...I don't care if he had a crummy past, I won't cut him slack. He's so mean to us as it is. And I haven't had a cherry on top of a sundae lifestyle either. Hopefully I can knock some sense into that punk."

"you know..." Alex said. "I notice, Kaiba's kinda hot in this light." Kay felt her face heat up for some reason and got a little peeved at this. But...why?

"Dude, I do NOT want to hear that!" she snapped.

"Heh, relax, I'm joking. I tohught you'd laugh. ...Why are you turning red?" Alex asked, tilting her head.

Kay's face grew even hotter and she cleared her throat.

"No reason, I'm just feeling really warm is all."

"O...kay?" Alex said, not sure what else to think.

"Will you geeks hurry it up?" Seto yelled.

"Well sorry, we're not all part sky scraper and walk as fast, Egoman!" Kay snapped before running to catch up to the group. Marik decided to make his grand entrance.

"It's such a lovely day, isn't it, pharaoh?" Cat sighed.

"And it just got uglier." Kay, Kristen, Tori, Adelinda, Anzu, Honda, Duke, and Jounouchi all nodded.

"you can say that again."

"And it just got uglier." They sweatdropped.

"Cat, we didn't mean that literally." She blushed.

"Sorry!" ^^;

"Too bad some of your friends can't enjoy it from dying in their hospital beds!" He stood on some rubble, cape billowing in the wind.

"What is he, king of the mountain?" Kristen asked.

"I'd say he thinks he's kind of the world." Kay sighed.

"He's an idiot...I think he can almost give Jounouchi a run for his money in stupidity."

"Ye-HEY!"

"See what I mean?"

"Hey artichoke head!" Jounouchi yelled. Kristen looked at Kay.

"Articho-"

"I don't get it either, Ki-Ki."

"You're going down!"

"Well, aren't you brave. But you're out of this tournament so I have no interest in dueling you."

"Oh yeah? Why don't you come down here and say that again."

"Easy, Jounouchi."

"Let's get on with these duels." He looked at Seto. "I'm in a bloodythursty mood." He smirked. "But who will be my next victim? Kaiba, Kay, or the pharaoh himself?"

"Just chill out!" Mokuba yelled. "We'll tell you insdie the tower, is that clear?" Marik chortled wickedly.

"Then why don't we proceed so the fun can begin?"

"Define fun, Marik!" Duke snapped. They walked up to the tower.

"So, what's inside this thing?" Jounouchi asked.

"Why don't you try listening for a change, Jounouchi?" Seto asked. He glared.

"Who said I was talking to you, rich boy?"

"What, were oyu talking to Honda?" Kay asked.

"Maybe I was!"

"And how would he know?"

"Don't ask me!" The doors to the tower opened. It was dark inside and Roland stood, waiting.

"Your attention please." The lights turned on. "Step to the center of the tower." Everyone walked in.

It was a fairly large room with four doors and an escalator as well as their entrance. Everything was made of steel and looked high tech but it was pretty empty.

"The second half of the Battle City Finals will take place right here."

"So far, it's not so impressive."

"Don't judge a book by its cover, Jounouchi." Cat smiled. "Maybe something will pop out of thin air. All in all, that wouldn't surprise me." Anzu nodded.

"I agree with all the wird stuff that's been going on in this tournament."

"This place doesn't look like a dueling arena," Kristen said, looking around. Mokuba smirked, arms crossed.

"Oh yeah? Just wait a see." Adelinda smiled at him.

"As you know, there are four finalists remaining. Yugi, Kay, Marik, and of course, Mr. Kaiba."

"Yeah, yeah, of course Mr. Kaiba." Seto smirked.

"Jealous, Kay?"

"Of what?" she snapped.

"You'll notice we're surrounded by four doors. Each finalist must choose a door through which to enter. Choose wisely."

"What difference does it make?" Kay sighed.

"What's behind them?" Yami asked. The doors all opened.

"Before we may proceed with the next round of the Battle City Finals, each participant must choose one of the four doors that surround us."

"Didn't he just say that?" Kristen whispered to Cat.

"I think he wants to make sure they get it."

"Or he wants to make sure Jounouchi gets it!" Kristen and Cat giggled and Jounouchi glared at Alex.

"How are they suppossed to know which door to pick?" Jounouchi asked. "what do you think, Yuge."

"I don't think there's a wrong choice."

"Hey, I'll help ya pick." Jounouchi grinned and started spinning and pointing at each door. "One potato, two potato, three potato, four. Five potato, six potato, seven potato, more." Seto walked toward one door.

"How did that fool make it into the finals period?" he asked. Yami was smiling and had a sweatdrop on his head. Kay shook her head and walked toward a door.

"Just when I thought he couldn't be any stupider."

"Just a pick a door, you geek!" Seto snapped.

"Yeah! Spare us your idiocy. I fear it's contagious."

"I choose...you!" Jounouchi pointed at a door near Marik. "Alright, Yugi, we have a winner. That's your door right there." Marik growled a bit and walked into the door. "Hold it! I called that door for Yugi."

"It's alright, Jounouchi. I'll just go into this one."

"Huh?" He turned to see Yugi walking toward the final door. "But what about my potato song?" he asked.

"You're not even a finalist so just shut up and let's move on!" Kay snapped.

"Well, excuse me, Miss Thing." (I had to use that potato song, it was too funny to cut out.)

"Everyone else, come on an follow me!" Mokuba called. Adelinda ran over to him and he smiled at her. They followed him to the escalator.

"Goodl uck, guys!"

"Knock em dead, Kay."

"We'll be rooting for you, Onee-san."

Kay smiled and looked at the dark blue terminal in her door. She walked over and stood on it.

"Hmph...so what now?" she asked, crossing her arms. The door closed and she frowned. "That answers that." Her terminal rose up.

Mokuba ran into another room and was followed by everyone else. "Come on!" he called. They stood in the middle and looked up. You could see the tower and there were marks on the walls for life points starting close to the bottom at 4000 and going up to the top.

"Ehoa! I can barely see the top of this thing!" Anzu exclaimed.

"Yeah." Cat looked around. "But where's Kay and Yugi? And Marik and Kaiba?" she asked, confused.

"Yeah, what gives, Mokuba?" Duke asked.

"Where are the duelists?" Kristen asked. Roland stepped forward.

"Why, here they come right now." Everyone looked confused.

A terminal rose up with Yugi in it.

"Hey, it's Yugi!" Seto's terminal rose up second, Marik's third, and Kay's fourth.

"Well, looks like everyone's here for role call."

"So what's the deal?" Jounouchi asked. "Is this some kind of four-way duel?" he asked. Seto looked down at him.

"Roland will explain the rules, and I've asked him to speak slowly so anyone in this room with an IQ as low as yours can follow."

"Excellant thinking, Kaiba." He smirked.

"It's only fair, right?" Jounouchi's face flushed with anger.

"You got a big mouth, Kaiba!"

"Who're you to talk, monkey boy?" Kay asked.

"Kay, you'd better watch it!"

"Or you'll what? Not only can I duel circles around oyu, Jounouchi, I could beat you in a fight."

"Sounds like a challenge."

"Will you please?" Roland snapped. It grew quiet. "Thank you. Before the winner of the Battle City Tournament can be crowned we must first narrow down the finalists. So, in the semifinal round, the four remaining duelists will be reduced to two. But first, gentlemen-"

"HEY!" Kay yelled. "DO I LOOK LIKE A MAN TO YOU?!" she yelled. roland turned red.

"I-i'm sorry, Ma'am. I didn't mean-"

"THAT IS JUST SEXIST, BUB! I might not be a girly-girl, BUT I AM NOT A MAN! I could prove that but I don't believe in public stripping."

"You tell him, Kay!" Tori yelled, laughing a bit. Roland cleared his throat, face still red. Seto smirked at Kay, amused by her outburst.

"Alright, let me rephrase that. Gentlmen and lady,"

"That's better."

"The preliminary duel must be played. This special duel will determine who faces who in the semifinals. And all four duelists will participate at one time. As you lose lifepoints, your terminal will climb higher. The first two duelists to reach the top will face each other in round 1."

"Hear that? It's a duel to see who duels."

"We caught that, Jounouchi. But it's good to see that you know."

"Each duelist will being with 4,000 lifepoints, and when it's your turn, you can attack any of the other players." Everyone gained 4,000 life points. "And now for some new regulations. You must all limit your dueling decks to no more than 40 cards, so take this time to prepare you deck."

Kay pulled out her deck and pulled out ten extra cards from her old strategy and placed it in her duel disk before activating it.

"Now, connect your duel disks to the monitor in front of you." Everyone connected a cream plug that was in the monitor to their duel disk. "This screen will display the images of the cards you play. Remembe,r winning or losing this duel has no effect on how you place in the finals. This is simply a strategic way to determine who your opponent will be in the semifinal round. Again, this duel will not affect your overall

placement."

"This is cool." Cat smiled. "I can't wait to see how this duel turns out." Kristen nodded.

"Totally!"

"At least all the pressure's off." Anzu smiled at Honda, Duke, and Jounouchi. "It doesn't really matter who wins and loses in this duel, right guys?"

"That's not exactly true. This could be the most important duel these guys play."

"How do ya figure?" Jounouchi asked.

"They can control who they will duel." Everyone looked at Alex. "If someone wants to face someone else, they can have it so the other two players lose. And two dueslists can even gang up on one." Tori smiled at Jounouchi.

"Hey, you should be happy you're not in this duel. Knowing you and your luck, everyone would go after you."

"Hey, that's not cool!" Cat smiled and pat his shoulder.

"Relax, Jounouchi. Just sit back and watch." Everyone was ponderign on who they wanted to duel.

"I should probably duel Marik first and knock him out. That way, at least Mai and Odion will be OK. And I can cream Kaiba or Yugi in the finals. It doesn't matter who I beat, I care nothing for their God cards. My Blue Eyes is far more important and I'll show them how powerful it is."

"Prepare yourselves, duelists! The four-way battle is about to begin! Remember, the first two duelists to lose their lifepoints will face each other in the semifinals. It's time of begin! Now, to determine which duelist will make the first move."

"Why doesn't Yugi just go first?" Jounouchi asked.

"Why don't you pay attention to the rules that Mr. Kaiba worked so hard to create? You'll each choose a monster card from your deck and the attack points will determine who goes first. However, the monster you choose cannot be used in this duel. Kay looked in her deck and chose her "Red Eyes Black Chick."

"I don't want to lose a powerful monster. It's not worth it." Roland threw an arm up.

"It is now time to reveal your cards!" Each duelist held up their card. "Yes. Hold them up so all the plays can view them."

Seto had the Masked Beast Des Gardus. His was the strongest.

Yami held up Feril Imp.

Marik help up Rekunga. (That's what that card was in the manga soI'm going with it.)
Kay held up Red Eyes Black Chick.
"The results have been tallied. The order of duelists is as follows. First, Mr. Kaiba. An then Mr. Ishtar, then Mr. Mouto, and finally Miss Kay."
Oh, here's the terminal arrangment if you want to know.
Seto
Marik Kay
Yami
"Well, time to get this show on the road. I'll take down Marik next round and get back Mai and Odion for Jounouchi and Ishizu. Hopefully doing that cna snap Marik out of whatever is wrong with his head."

"Alright, enough waiting around! Let's start this duel!" Seto yelled.

## 25 - Four-Way Duel

"Alright, enough waiting around! Let's start this duel." Seto drew a card. "And now I'll place one card facedown, and then I'll summon Vorse Raider in attack mode." Vorse Raider appeared with 1900 attack points. "That ends my turn."

"Not bad, Seto Kaiba." Marik drew a card. "Then again, your monster's no match for my Newdoria." A weird, orange monster with green hair appeared in defense mode with only 800 defense points. "That's all for now."

"Is it me, or are Marik's monsters as ugly as he is?" Alex asked.

"It's not just you." Marik narrowed his eyes slightly and Kay frowned.

"Such a weak monster...it has to have trick behind it."

"Alright then, my move!" Yami drew a card. "I summon Big Shield Gardna to the field in defense mode." Big Shield Gardna appeared with 2600 defense points. "and place these face down." Yami placed two cards face down.

"My move." Kay drew a card. "Not too shabby. I play Royal Magical Library in defense mode." The monster appeared with 2000 defense points. "and I'll place three cards face down and end my turn."

"Which brings it back to me." Seto drew a card. "Heh, I suspected you wouldn't have much game, Kay. If you think that little defense will help you, you're sadly mistaken."

"You don't scare me, Kaiba."

"Not yet I don't."

"You're nothing but a pretty face, get over yourself."

"Well, we'll find out. I sacrifice my Vorse Raider to summon Judge Man." Vorse Raider vanished and a monster with 2200 attack points appeared.

"Hmph, that all?"

"No, this is! Judge Man destory her pitiful defense!"

"Heh, I should have guessed you'd be stupid and fall for my trap."

"What?!"

"I play Redirect. I'm sure you know how it works. This trap redirects your attack, and I aim it at any other

target on the field. And I choose Marik's Newdoria." He growled.

Judge Man stopped dead before attacking Kay's monster and turned and charged at Newdoria. Seto growled a bit. Judge Man destroyed Newdoria.

"Heh heh, why thnak you, Kay, for helping me use Kaiba to activate Newdoria's special effect. When it goes to the graveyard, I can destroy any monster on the field. So say goodbye to Judge Man." Kay smirked.

"Oh well, too bad, so sad, Kaiba."

"I'll get you for that." Judge Man was destroyed.

"I take it you end your turn."

"Just go, Marik."

"Very well. It's time fo rme to take charge of this duel." He drew a card. "Now, which one of my cards should I unleash first?"

(btw, Redirect, I dunno if that's a real card. It's based off Attack Guidance armor but I think Seto uses that card in this duel so I just made a simpler version. Just want to clarify. I may make up some new cards, and I'll be sure to let you know if I do)

Marik smirked and placed a card face down.

"I place these cards face down, for later." He played two cards. "Then I'll summon Lord Poison in attack mode." A hideous, green monster with purple spikes sticking out of its deformed body appeared with 1500 attack points. "Your move, pharaoh."

"I know!" He drew a card. "And now, behold, Kaiba. I sacrfice my Big Shield Gardna to summon my Beast of Gilfer." Big Shield Gardna vanished and was replaced with blue and red monster that had 2200 attack points. "And now my beast, prepare yourself for an assault! Beast of Gilfer, attack Kaiba's life points directly!"

"Seto, no!" Mokuba cried. The flame attack drew closer.

"Guess again! your tactics are obvious!" He raised an arm up and then pointed. "Observe." One card flipped over. "You triggered my trap. And thanks to my card Attack Guidance Armor," **(OH! I am so good. How did I know?)** "I'll redirect your attack to any monster on the playing field. Now of course I could easily target your Beast of Gilfer, Yugi. Or not. Now, let's see."

Kay sighed.

"This could be a while."

"Hmm...obviously, my target is going to be Lord Poison, Marik's only monster." Marik glared and Kay

smirked.

"Nice. That thing was making me sick anyway."

"Alright, Marik, I aim Yugi's attack at you!" The fire redirected. Marik smirked.

"Hmph, really? Not if I activate this! Mirror Force."

"Aw, I was so hoping that gross monster would be gone."

"What? No way!" Seto exclaimed.

"Yes, so I'm able to reflect the attack back at Yugi. So your monster's destroyed."

"Don't be so confident, Marik." Everryone looked at Kay.

"What?!"

"Yugi, consider this a little gift as I play the card Trap Jammer! This negates your Mirror Force, Marik. So sorry." He glared.

"You little..." The mirror cracked and shattered. The attack struck Lord Poison and Marik glared.

"Well, too bad."

"Not so fast!"

"Hm?"

"I play a Magic Card, Spell of Pain. This handy little card allows me to redirect the life points damage I would have recieved to someone else. So, Kay, since you were kind enough to destory my Mirror Force, I'll gladly repay you by taking some of your life points."

"Please, you really think that's going to scare me." She lost 700 points and her terminal rose up.

"Kay! You ok?" Cat yelled.

"I'm fine. It's not like I'm scared of heights." She shrugged. "I'm actually rather fond of them."

"Just don't fall and you should be ok."

"Jounouchi, if I wanted to fall, I would have jumped off yelling 'Free Fall!' But am I stupid like you? No!"

"Ouch."

"Wow, this duel's intense. My brother redirected Yugi's attack to Marik, and then Marik tried to reflect the attack back at Yugi, but then Kay destroyed his trap. So Marik's monster was wiped out but then he

played a magic card and so Kay took the damage."

"Well, Kay, your lifepoints just dropped by 700."

"Thanks, Captain Obvious, but I'm well aware of that!" She drew a card and looked up. "Let's see... Yugi still has his Beast of Gilfer and one face down card on the field. Marik and Kaiba have no monsters and no face down cards. I have my Magical Library defending me and my Flute of Summoning Dragon facedown. It only has one spell counter so I can play one spell card and maybe I can use a third so I can activate its power before I sacrifice. I should get some offense on the field soon or else I may not have another chance.

"What on Earth is taking you so long? Just make your move!" Seto yelled.

"Hasn't anyone ever told you not to rush a lady?! And good moves take time, but how would you know that, Kaiba?" Kay snapped. She placed a card on her duel disk. "I play the magic card: Pot of Greed. We all know how it works so I won't waste time explaining." She drew two cards. "Next I'll play Ookazi to inflict 800 points of direct damage to you, Kaiba." she pointed at him. He growled.

"You..."

"Heh, just a little present." Fires appeared around him, sapping away 800 of Seto's lifepoints. His terminal rose up past hers.

"You're going to regret that Kay."

"Hey, you got the easy way out. And now that three magic cards have been played while my library was on the field, I can activate its special ability. By removing three spell counters, I can draw a card." Kay drew a card. "And now I'll sacrifice my Library to summon Curse of Dragon!" The gold-yellow dragon appeared on the field with 2000 attack points. "Go, Curse of Dragon, attack Marik directly!"

"No!" Curse of Dragon reared its head and released a powerful flame attack to Marik and he lost 2000 lifepoints. "Grr..."

"Enjoy the view up there, Marik." He rose up even more. "To wrap it up, I place two cards face down. Alright, Kaiba, your turn."

"Heh, time to make you pay for touching my lifepoints."

"C'mon, you're boring me. Make a move." Seto drew a card.

"Wow, this is getting complicated." Kristen nodded.

"Yeah. So far Yugi's in first place with 400 points, Kay's in second with 3300, Kaiba's in third with 3200, and Marik's in last with 2000. But it seems like anything can happen in this duel."

"C'mon, Kay!" Alex cheered.

"Who's she trying to face?" Duke asked.

"It might be Yugi, since they're closer to the bottom."

"I wouldn't count on that. I think Kay wants to face Marik so she wants to knock him out first and then lose too."

"She may want to face Kaiba."

"True. I don't know, with her it's a mystery." Everyone nodded.

"Well, one thing's for sure, this duel is never stable for long." Anzu sighed. "I kinda hope Yugi faces Marik because it's more than likely he'll win and then he's gone."

"That's true."

"I'll place three cards face down on the field, and then I'll summon the mighty Blade Knight in attack mode." A knight in light blue armorm with a green and gold shield and sword appeared with 1600 attack points. "Time ot lose more lifepoints, Marik!"

"If this work, Marik will only have 400 points left!" Jounouchi exclaimed. "I hate to cheer for Kaiba, but don't screw this up, rich boy!"

"Blade Knight, attack Marik directly!"

"I activate a trap card!" Everyone stared at Kay.

"What?!" Seto asked. She smirked.

"Reinforcements! It'll raise Blade Knight's attack points by 500 for the duration of the Battle Phase."

"You've got to be joking!" Marik exclaimed.

"I'll even help Kaiba to knock you out, freak!"

"You'd better pray you're not dueling me, Kay. I swear you'll die!" Blade Knight's attack rose to 2100 and it knocked Marik's lifepoints to zero. Yami stared in awe. Marik was down and out. He rose all the way to the top of the tower, glaring.

Seto looked at Kay. "Why did you help?!"

"Because..." She grinned. "I want to face Marik, and I needed him out so he would not interfere with my plans."

"So she DOES want to face Marik!" Tori exclaimed.

"Yeah, Kay'll win back Mai's life!" Jounouchi grinned.

"Well, from the osund of it, you plan on losing this duel too."

"Gee, did oyu figure that out by yourself? And is your turn done yet?" Kay snapped.

"Yes. Now we go to Yugi."

"I know." He looked at his cards. "I'll attack Kay's monster with my Beast of Gilfer." Kay's Curse of Dragon was destoryed and Kay lost 200 lifepoints. She rose up a little past Seto. She drew a card.

"I summon Lord of Dragons. And I activate my face down, Flute of Summoning Dragon to special Summon Mirage Dragon and Hyozanryu. And I attack your Blade Knight, Kaiba." He smirked.

"You fell into my trap! I play Ring of Destruction." The ring appeared on Hyozanryu. Now we both will take 2100 points of damage. correction, you do. Because I play ring of Defense which protects me."

"Sorry, Hyozanryu." Her monsters self destructed and she lost 2100 lifepoints. Kay rose up, lifepoints at 1000.

"Heh heh, that was a foolish move, Kay."

"You think so?"

"Hm?"

"I'm not trying to win!"

"Kay, think this through!"

"Huh?" she looked at Yami. "Stay out of this, Yugi."

"Wait, are you sure it's wise to duel Marik?"

"What, you don't think I can handle it? Look, Yugi, I promised Ishizu and Jounouchi I'd bring back Mai and Odion after I defeat Marik." Seto laughed evilly.

"How touching. Anyway, Yugi, don't think you can save her. There's no way you can defeat me before I defeat her." Yami glared.

"Yugi!" He looked down at Alex. "Don't fight with Kay. Let her duel Marik." Cat nodded.

"Alex is right! I think she could do it!"

"Don't protect her." Jounouchi nodded.

"Everyone's right, Yuge! Ya can't keep protecting your friends in their duels. We all gotta develop our skills on our own and fight our own fights." Yami nodded.

"You're right."

"If you're all done talking, I'd like to end my turn. So, Kaiba, you gonna finish me off? she asked."

"It'll be my pleasure." He drew a card. "Blade Knight, attack her lifepoints directly." Blade Knight flew up and slashed at her. "It's all over, Kay!" Her lifepoints hit zero and she chuckled.

"Thanks, Kaiba." He blinked and she winked at him. "I got my duel." Her teminal rose up. "Well, hello tall, dark and ugly."

"Heh, you're very misfortunate, having to face me."

"Heh, I'd say you're the misfortunate one. Ready to face me?"

"I'm always ready to kill another foolish mortal." Roland threw his arm up.

"This duel is over! The smifinal bouts have now been determined! The first semi-final duel will be Marik Ishtar against Kay Simms. Followed by Mr. Kaiba against Yugi Mouto."

"One of us will get past the next round. The other goes home a loser."

"Wow, Kay is dueling Marik." Cat bit her lip. "I hope she wins." Anzu nodded.

"I don't think I can handle it if she winds up meeting the same fate as Mai."

"Don't you worry." They looked at Mokuba. "Kay is good. She could even rival with my big brother, so she can crush that chump, Marik."

"Well, if Mokuba says it, then it must be true." Adleinda hugged Mokuba.

"Onee-san will win! And thne she'll face Mokuba's Nii-sama."

"I think she'll face Yugi. No way he'll lose to Kaiba!" Jounouchi said.

"I dunno, Seto's gotten a lot better since Duelist kingdom. I don't think Yugi stands much of a chance."

"Open the tower gates now!" Roland commanded. Everyone looked up. A mechanical click filled the air as four openings large enough for each terminal appeared at the top of the tower. "It's time to proceed to the next dueling site." Marik chuckled evilly.

"I take it you're ready to join your friends, Mai and Odion in the land of the dead?"

"Trust me, Marik. I'm not losing."

"We'll have to wait and see, now won't we?"

"I have a little surprise in my deck for you."

"I've watched oyu duel through the eyes of my rare hunters, I know your deck."

"So you think."

"Launch the dueling platforms to the top of the tower." Seto and Yami's terminals sped up to the top.

"Aw, lucky!" Kay cried. "That looks cool." (Dudes, that did look cool. Very dnagerous, but cool)

"And let the semifinals begin!"

Oh, HELL YEAH! Next is Kay verses Marik, I am so stoked! I've been dying to write this duel for such a long time. I hope you liked the fourway duel. It shows how Kay likes to manipulate her opponents sometimes because she is just that awesome. Await my update.

## 26 - Near the Brink of Death pt. 1

## Oh my God, YES! Finally, we are here. I hope you enjoy this duel. I will put my heart and soul into writing this one. So prepare yourselves!

"The four Battle City finalists are now being transported to the top of the tower for the first duel of the semifinals." All four duelists were racing up the tower in their dueling terminals. Marik was smirking at Kay and she was glaring at him.

"Our shadow game awaits. I hope you're prepared to be swallowed up by the darkness and killed within the shadows. Can you sense the blood lust already?"

"Heh, you wish, Marik. I won't lose to you."

"Heh heh heh, so confident, are we?" They continued up.

"Well this is it." Honda frowned.

"I hope Kay can beat Marik."

"You and me both, Cat." Alex sighed.

"The duel starts now. Let's go!" Mokuba exclaimed, smiling. A door behind him opened. "Move it, or miss it." everyone could not help but be cheered up by the adorable little Kaiba. They ran for the door.

"Wait." Everyone looked at Duke. "Shouldn't someone head back to keep an eye on Mai? We sorta just left her."

"I'll go."

"Shizuka."

"Hey, it's no problem, Katsuya. And I don't think I want to watch another shadow game."

"Now that you mention it, I kinda feel the same way..."

"Tori, Shizuka, why don't you both keep and eye on Mai? We'll tell Kay you're rooting for her." They both nodded.

"Yeah." And with that, they ran off.

"So, shall we go?" Cat asked. Everoyne nodded and followed Mokuba.

The terminals finally reached the top and a half circle slot opened beihind them andm oved the terminals over a type of grid system to a designated position.

"Marik Ishtar and Kay Simms will face off in five minutes!" Roland announced. When Marik and Kay's terminals moved out of their paths into the sunlight and locked in on the roof of the tower, they each stepped off. Marik got there first. Kay was second. He smirked at her.

"Ready to duel?" Kay asked. "Or, rather, ready to lose and bring back each and every person who dueled you?"

"I'm prepared to duel, but your victory is not possible."

"We'll just see about that."

"Yes, we will." Kay looked around.

"So where the heck is everyone else?"

"Why do you want your little friends here? So they can watch you die?"

"Keep talking like that and I'll use this oppertunity to fling you off the tower. And there won't be any witnesses."

"you could, but I wouldn't die."

"...that's just freaky, dude." At this moment, Yami's terminal rose up. (That took a while) He stepped off.

"Hey Yugi." He smiled at her.

"Hello Kay."

"I hope you don't mind if I beat Marik for you. But, I'll try to leave the remains for you." He chuckled.

"I wish you luck."

"Luck schmuck. All I need is my deck and I know I can whip this guy." Seto's terminal rose up at long friggin last.

"This shouldn't take long."

"What was that, rich-boy?!" Kay yelled. Yami pat her shoulder.

"Kay, keep a cool head."

"hmph, sorry Yugi. He infuriates me."

"don't cloud your mind with anger. This duel may be the most difficult and dangerous one you'll ever

face."

"Yugi." She smiled at him. "Pharaoh, whoever you are, thanks for looking out for me. But I can take care of myself. You worry about protecting everyone else. I'll win, just keep the faith in me." He was a bit surprised but then grinned and nodded.

"Alright." She winked and gave a thumbs up.

"Wake up, Kay. You don't stand a chance against his God card."

"Oh yeah? Just wait. Did you forget I designed many of the cards in this game? My deck is filled with many hidden surprises you could never dream of."

"Is that so?"

"Talk is cheap. I can only display my power on the field, so back off and let me fight my fight."

"Fine." She walked away. Yami forwned at Seto. "I'm the only one who can defeat Ra, so she'll fall the minute it's played."

"Kaiba, the Sun Dragonf Ra has powers we don't yet understand."

"Wrong, Yugi. I've uncovered the secrets of Ra. While you geeks were asleep, my computer was translating the Egyptian writing the no one else could. Kay," She looked at him, "you'll help me defeat his Sun Dragon."

"And what makes you say that?" she asked coldly.

"I'll be observing your duel very closely, so try to live long enough for me to see that dragon."

"I won't just survive that long, I'll live until his lifepoints hit zero." At this moment, Mokuba and the rest of the gang ran up the stairs and stepped outside.

"We're here bro!"

"Hey Mokuba." Kay smiled at him. Mokuba and Adelinda ran ove rto her and hugged her.

"Win, onee-san!"

"Good luck, Kay." She smiled and hugged them back.

"Now how could I lose with you two cheering me on? Thanks guys. You're more supportive than Kaiba." Kay glared at him and he roleld his eyes before walking away.

"So, did we miss anything?" Anzu asked. Kay shook her head.

"Nope." She walked past them, a serious look on her face and stood in front of Marik. A gust of wind

blew to increase the drama of the moment.

"So...this is it...it's either win, or die." Kay narrowed her eyes. "Marik, I will not lose to you."

"Heh heh, we'll see if you feel the same way once our shadow game begins." Roland took his spot and everyone stood around the field to watch.

"The first duel of the Battle City semifinals is about to begin. To my left, Marik Ishtar. To my right, Kay Simms." The dueling stage rose.

"C'mon, Kay!" Cat cheered.

"Knock him out of here and get back Mai!" Kristen called.

"If you screw this up, you're answering to me!" Alex added.

"I get it, guys." Kay sighed. "Sometimes I question whether or not having my own cheer squad actually helps." Marik chortled wickedly. Marik and Kay both gained 4,000 lifepoints.

"Marik will begin!"

"Whatever happened to ladies first?" Kay mumbled.

"As you wish." Marik drew a card. "I play Gil Garth in attack mode." An odd metallic monster appeared with spikes on its arms and legs and it had 1800 attack points. "Then I shall place one card facedown and end my turn."

"Alright then." Kay drew a card. "I summon Dark Blade in attack mode and play two cards facedown and end my turn."

"Well, Kay's mosnter is at least the same strength so even if Marik destroys it, his mosnter dies too."

"It's not that simple, Anzu. Kay's actually in a bad spot."

"Huh?" she looked at Cat.

"Marik can summon another monster and even if it's weaker, he can attack with Gil Garth and she'll be wide open."

"What about her facedowns?"

"I don't know. But I never can stay calm when someone duels Marik." The millennium symbol glowed on Marik's forehead.

"The time has come to take this duel to the next level." Kay narrowed her eyes.

"Don't tell me..." A familiar fog filled the air and she glared. "Great. Just great." Everyone immediately

grew uneasy.

"Not another shadow game!" Kristen exclaimed.

"C'mon, Marik, give it a rest!" Alex yelled.

"Heh heh heh, I don't believe in showing mercy. And your little friend acts so tough. Let's see if she can handle it better than Mai could." Marik raised his rod. "The darkness lusts for your life and blood. You're even younger than your friend Mai, which means you'll taste even more fresh."

"Ok, that is disgusting! I do not want to hear you talking about how I taste. A. It's sick and wrong. B. I'll rack you if you keep it up. And c. Cannibalism is NOT cool."

"Who said I'm the one who will be feasting on you?"

"You must really want a kick in the groin."

"You are not fooling anyone. I see the fear in your eyes."

"Well, you must be seeing things because the only thing that I'm afraid of is throwing up if I keep looking at your face, Marik. So bring it on, Marik I am not afraid of oyu or this twisted game of yours."

"Heh, fine. Prepare to feel the same pain as your friend Mai. Observes." A light blue glowing wire appeared from Kay's monster to her.

"What the heck is this wire?"

"You'll soon find out. As this game progresses, you will feel the same pain as your monsters."

"Look, chump. You tried this on Mai and it was all a head game. I am not going to fall for it."

"But I was not as powerful then. I have killed another since that moment and now my power is peaking. It will be much more difficult to break this illusion, if it even is an illusion."

"Are you here to blab or duel me because I'm falling asleep."

"Impatient, are we? Very well." He drew a card. "I'll summon Drillago in attack mode." A yellow monster made entirely of sharp drilled appeared with 1600 attack points. "Now, Gil Garth attack her Dark Blade and leave her defenseless."

"Oh no."

"look out, Kay." She smirked.

"Reveal, face down!"

"What?!"

"Remember this? It's a handy little trap called Reinforcements. And it just boosted my Dark Blade's attack by 500. Now, attack with Dark Slash of Demise!" Dark Blade slahsed and obliterated Marik's monster. He doubled over a bit and grabbed his chest and his lifepoints dropped to 3500. "How do you like them apples?"

"Heh, well, I should have seen this. You're not as weak as I may have thought. Fine, make your move."

"I will." She drew a card. "I sacrifice my Dark Blade to summon my Curse of Dragon." Dakr Blade vanished and Kay's dragon appeared with 2000 attack points. "Go, attack his Drillago with Hell Flame." Curse of Draogn reared its head and blasted Drillago to bits. Marik grunted at the pain of the attack and his lifepoints went down to 3100. "Well, so much for your Drillago. And here you thought it'd be an easy win."

Marik snickered and looked up, millennium eye on his forehead glowing. "Heh, you've had your fun." He draw a card. "But now it's time fo rme to end all that with this. My tribute burial card. Now I can bring back one monster card from each of our graveyards and sacrifice them to summon an even stronger creature to drain you of all will and strength with a brutal onslaught."

"Well let's see what ya got, Marik."

"Gil Garth, Dark Blade, I sacrifice you to summon this, the mighty Helpoemer." Yeah, it's this blue corpse-like monster on a gold and orange shield like thing. It's really weird to describe it. It's just ugly and freaky, ok? It has 2000 attack points. "And I can assure you that this new monster of mine is more than her appears to be."

"Well, he's ugly. I give him that."

"I'll place one card facedown and end my turn."

"Hm." Kay raised an eyebrow, surprised he did not attack.

"That Helpoemer must have an important power that's crucial to his strategy if Marik didn't attack and destroy my Curse of Dragon." Kay drew a card. "I summon Koumouri Dragon in attack mode." The purple dragon appeared with 1500 attack points. Marik laughed.

"You foolish girl! You've fallen right into my trap. Raveal facedown card. By summoning a monster in attack mode, you activated my Hidden Soldiers trap card. The gives me the ability to summon any monster with four stars or less. Meet my Plasma Eel." A metal snake-like beast with dark blue pincers and two sharp yellow points on each side of it's head.

"It's cute compared to the rest of your monsters." Marik looked a bit annoyed at the fact that she had called one his monsters "cute."

"You won't think it's cute for much longer when I activate its special ability. The power of Plasma Grip!" Plasma eel moved forward and clamped to Kay's Curse of Dragon, sinking its pincers into its head and binding the rest of the dragon with its body. "Now for the fun part. When my eel attaches itself to a

monster, it lowers that monster's strength. So your dragon loses 500 points. And, due to our little game, you feel that monsters pain."

Curse of Dragon was shocked by Plasma eel and Kay felt as if her own body was being shocked. She fell to one knee, trying to shake off the feeling.

"Fight it, Kay!" Yami yelled.

"Hang in there!" Alex, Cat, Anzu, and Kristen yelled.

"Well, now, are you beginning to regret dueling me?" Marik asked, a manic look in his eyes. Kay looked up, panting.

"So...that's what you put Mai through..." She stood up, eyes cold and angry. "Now that I know how she suffered I swear...you are going to pay..." He laughed evilly.

"Is that so?"

"Yes. You can blast at me all you like, but I promised Jounouchi that I'd bring Mai back. And even if he is a pain, I promised I'd do it. So if I have to die to kill you, I will do so!" She straightened, loooking just fine. Marik wa sin shock.

"What?! You should be on your knees, begging for mercy."

"You wish, bub. I am not gonna stay down like a weakling. And you failed ot notice that even though your eel shocked me, I have my little face down card right over here."

"Hm?"

"Reveal trap card: Two-Way Fire." **(Note: Original card here.)** "This trap card can only be activated if I have two dragons on the field and if you have one monster with 1500 attack points or more. This trap allows me to lower one of your monster's attack points by 150 for each star on my lowest level monster on the field. Koumouri dragon has four stars, so Helpoemer loses 600 attack points. That's not all. The second effect of this card is I gain 100 lifepoints for ever star my highest lever monster has. Curse of Dragon is a five star monster, so I gain 500 lifepoints."

Two bursts of flame appeared, one was red and one was blue .The blue flame hit Kay and boosted her lifepoints to 4500. The other burned Helpoemer and zapped some of its attack power form it. Marik groaned in pain as the flames licked Helpoemer. Marik's lifepoints fell down to 3000.

"Heh. I just keep chipping away at your points. You might have strong monsters, but my traps act like leeches and I can still bring you down." Marik laughed evilly.

"I confess, I'm amazed you've lowered my lifepoints tihs far so soon in the game. But I have to thank you."

"Excuse me?"

"By attacking my Helpoemer, you have caused your own demise."

"How is that? What are you planning, Marik?"

"It's simple. When you sent my Helpoemer to the card graveyard, you activated my monster's special ability."

"Enlighten me, what does it do?"

"Patience, my dear, for you're about to find out and I doubt you'll like it."

"Don't call me 'my dear'! That is just friggin weird!" Kay yelled.

A blue spirit flew up and flew into Kay's graveyard.

"Helpoemer is in your graveyard now."

"And I take it that's not good?" she asked dryly.

"Heh, it gets much better. Now it can destroy you from within your own duel disk."

"Could you specify a bit more? What exactly will it do from within my graveyard?" A ghostly hand appeared. "What that?!"

"Time for you to learn Helpoemer's special ability. Say farewell to random card from your hand!" The hand snatched a card and dragged it to the graveyard.

"Hmph." It had dragged her Unity card. A helpful magic card but not too great a loss.

"Yes, and I'm afraid there's plenty more where that came from. For as long as my Helpoemer remains in your graveyard, you'll lose one card every turn." Kay glared.

"And you think that scares me? The card graveyard is still a part of the field, and it can be used in numerous ways." Marik frowned. "You might help me out by sending special cards to my graveyard, Marik. It could assist me in bringing forth some of my best cards."

"You're bluffing."

"I guess you'll have to wait to find out."

"So what's the deal with the card in Kay's Graveyard?" Anzu asked.

"It removes one card from her hand with every passing turn."

"This could be a big problem for her."

"It's my move." He drew a card. "Farewell." He placed two cards on the field. "I'll place two cards facedown and end my turn." Kay drew a card. "I play one card facedown on the field and switch Koumouri dragon to defense mode. And now, Curse of Dragon, attack him directly!"

"Ha-ha! You fool, you have allowed me to activate my card of last will. Now I can draw five cards. Looks like my hand is full, now which of my new cards should I use against you first? Let's see..."

"Who cares? My attack is still going to wipe out a nice big piece of your lifepoints."

"I activate negate attack."

"Damn." Kay's dragon stopped.

"So much for that. Now your Battle phase is over." He chuckled. "And now I reveal my facedown, Coffin Seller."

"What?!"

"Now each time one of your monsters is sent to the graveyard, 300 lifepoints are deducted from your total."

"No way!"

"Yes, and there's more. Much more. Remember Helpoemer?" The hand lashed up and snatched a card. Kay frowned. It took her Cyber Jar. That was one of her best special effect monsters. Kay also lost 300 lifepoints and they were down to 4200.

"It's over for oyu. I've devised a fullproof system of depleting your lifepoints each turn without having to do anything at all."

"You want a medal? There's hundreds of strategies like this, and they can all be eliminated."

"Well, don't forget my Plasma Eel is still attached to your Curse of Dragon which lowers its attack points even more." Curse of Dragon was shocked and it lost attack points and Kay was shocked too. "My move." He drew a card. "At last." Kay panted and glared at him. Those shocks were taking a lot out of her. "first I'll place this card facedown on the field. And then I'll activate this, Premature Burial. This allows me to summon any monster that resides in my graveyard."

"Well? Which freak show of a monster is going to darken the field again?" she asked.

"Once I give up 800 lifepoints I shall revive Drillago from my card graveyard." His lifepoints fell to 2200. "But there's still more. Next I'll sacrifice Drillago so I can bring forth thisw card." A strange, blue fiend of some sort with 1500 attack points appeared.

"What is that thing?"

"I've summoned an unstoppable creature known as the Legendary Fiend. This beast gets stronger by

700 attack points each turn. Now make your move, if you dare." Kay draw a card.

"I play pot of Greed. I get to draw two more cards." She drew two and smiled. "Now I play the magic card Graceful Charity and draw three cards then discard two." She did just that. "Now I play Mystical Elf in defense-"

"Not to fast. I play Nightmare Wheel!" Her Koumouri Dragon got stuck in the torture wheel.

"What are oyu doing?!"

"Your pitiful littl emonster is now held captive by my nightmare wheel, which means he can't attack me or defend you as long as my trap card remains on the field. So basically, he's completely useless to you."

"Fine. I play Mystical Elf in defense mode and I'll switch Curse of Dragon to defense mode." Her dragon switched positions. "Now, your move."

"Drain her, Plasma Eel! Weaken her Dragon and her body." The normal shock, we know it. Kay gasped and coughed. Everyone gasped.

"Kay, are you OK?" Cat yelled. She looked up.

"Yes...for now..."

"Let the duel continue." Marik drew a card. "Oh, you also lose 500 points due to my nightmare wheel." Kay's points fell to 3700.

"Gee, thanks for letting me know."

"And my Legendary Fiend gains 700 attack points." Its power grew to 2200. "Now, feel his wrath. Legendary Fiend, attack her Mystical Elf." Mystical Elf was slashed and Kay grunted.

"God, that hurts..."

"And there's more. Everytime one of oyu rmonsters goes to the graveyard-"

"I lose 300 lifepoints. I get it, ok?" she snapped. Her points fell to 3400.

"Good, you paid attention. Next I'll play one card facedown and end my turn. Make your move, although it's hopeless."

"Kay...this is not looking good."

"Kaiba-sama, Onee-san can still win, right?" Adelinda asked. He looked at her.

"It's small...but if he doesn't play his god card, Kay might be able to win." Adelinda nodded and Mokuba looked in surprise at Seto's words.

"My move." She drew a card. "I play the magic card soul release. It lets me remove up to five cards from either my graveyard or yours. And I choose to remove Helpoemer."

"Oh no."

"Your monster only works if its in my graveyard, but when it's removed from play, it's of no use." Helpoemer vanished and Kay smirked.

"She did it!"

"And next I'll play this card, Heavy Storm."

"No!"

"Yup, it destroys all magic and trap cards on the field. So say goodbye to those pesky traps of yours." Marik growls as all of his traps were destroyed. "But that is not all. Next, I'm gonna summon a personal favorite, Lord of Dragons in defense mode. And his special effect renders all traps, magic, and monster effects useless on my dragons, so your Plasma Eel can be a pretty accessory for my dragon, but that's about it."

"It's already been drained so what does it matter?"

"True. But my dragon is not the star of this show. Check out one more magic card in my hand. It's called Flute of Summoning Dragon."

"Yeah! Now Kay can summon any two dragon monsters from her hand."

"Go ahead, you can't possibly have a dragon powerful enough." Kay snickered.

"Remember when I said my deck is full of surprises? Well, this one wa sone I've been dying to show everyone." Marik frowned and everyone else looked confused and intruiged. "You see, this card is so rare, everyone thought only four existed in the world, now one's destroyed and there's only three." Kay pointed at Seto. "And Kaiba has the only three." His eyes widened.

"No, she can't mean-"

"I do. I special summon one dragon and that dragon is the Blue Eyes White Dragon." The gorgeous white and blue dragon rose from the card hologram and threw back its graceful neck, roaring. And it had 3000 attack points. Marik stared in disbelief.

"No way...how can you have that card?"

"Hey, I got it for my birthday. And now, your fiend is finished. Blue Eyes White Dragon, attack with white lightening." Blue Eyes reared its head and unleashed its white lightening. Legendary Fiend died and Marik's lifepoints fell all the way down to 1400. "I warned you about my power. And come next turn, my dragon will wipe you out!"

YES! YES! Did I not tell you? God YES!!! Kay's Blue Eyes is finally here. Oh MAN! I was so looking forward to that. WOW! I cannot wait for the next part! But my DVD player is being weird with this DVD so I have to use my portable one and it acts sorta weird too. so...yeah. I am sad. :'(

I hope you liked part one.

## 27 - Near the Brink of Death pt. 2

#### WHOO-HOO! I got my DVD player to work so I'm really happy. ^\_^ Enjoy the update.

"I special summon one dragon and that dragon is the Blue Eyes White Dragon." Blue Eyes White Dragon rose from the card hologram and roared. Marik stared in disbelief.

"No way...how can you have that card?"

"Hey, I got it for my birthday. And now, your fiend is finished. Blue Eyes White Dragon, attack with white lightening." Blue Eyes reared its head and unleashed its white lightening. Legendary Fiend died and Marik's lifepoints fell all the way down to 1400. "I warned you about my power. And come next turn, my dragon will wipe you out!"

Everyone stared in amazement, shock, and/or disbelief. Adelinda cheered.

"Yes! You rule, Onee-san!" she cheered. So far, Kay had Koumouri Dragon, Mystical Elf, Curse of Dragon, Lord of Dragons, and Blue Eyes White Dragon on the field. Blue Eyes was her only monster in attack mode.

"Heh, I know. Well, Marik, you don't look so good." He glared.

"It's not over. Even though my Plasma Eel won't drain your monster's attakc, it will shock them and you!" He laughed evilly.

"What?!"

"Plasma Eel, show her!" Plasma eel shocked her Curse of Dragon. Although it lost no attack points, Kay felt the same pain and fell to her knees, panting.

"Kay!"

"I don't need monsters to bring you to your knees."

"Thi scan't go on much longer, guys!" Cat cried. "Kay is really getting hurt up there."

"But she has a Blue Eyes White Dragon. There's no way Marik cna beat that! He can't even summon his Egyptian God Card. He doesn't have any sacrifices."

"I wouldn't count on that." Anzu looked at Yami.

"What do you mean?"

"Don't forget. We still don't know all that the Winged Dragon of Ra is capable of. Marik may have a way to summon it without sacrificing."

"But, Blue eyes can still win! I mena, Marik only has one turn to fight back."

"That may be true, Kristen. But I have a feeling Marik is more determined to drain Kay of life rather lifepoints. Maybe he is not even planning to win this duel as we expect."

"No way! Marik ain't never gonna bring her down for long!"

"Open your eyes, Jounouchi!" Everyone looked at Seto. "Your little friend is down on her knees. What more do you think she can do? Even wit the Blue Eyes, she's not a master, like me. And I doubt she can weild i-"

"SHUT UP, KAIBA!" Everyone looked at Kay who was glaring down at him. "You are NOT high and mighty. I'm just as good as you and when I beat Marik, I'll have proven I am your equal if not better!"

"Hmph, I'd like to see you try."

"I won't try, I'll succeed. Your move, Marik."

"Ha, you think you can defeat me? You should know that is no easy task." Kay growled and narrowed her eyes. "Remember, your little friend Mai made the very same mistake, and you know well what fate befell her. Death."

"She's not dead yet, Marik!"

"No, but it won't be too much longer now. And I'll make certain your death will be much more slow and painful and that nobody will be able to save you."

"Well then hit me with your best shot!"

"My move." He drew a card. "Just what I needed." He smirked. "I'm about to call forth an extremely powerful beast. It's an eight-star monster known as Lava Golem."

"I think that hair of yours is crushing your brain. Do you forget? You have no monsters to sacrifice."

"How perceptive of you. I have every intention of making a sacrifice. Lava Golem allows me to sacrifice two monsters on your side of the field."

"I beg your pardon?!"

"Look on the bright side. I said Lava Golem stays on your side of the field." Kay's Lord of Dragons and Koumouri Dragon vanished.

(AN: Kay's Blue Eyes wasn't sacrificed because Marik knew she'd probably use a trap or

#### something to save it and stop his summoning)

A steel cage appeared around Kay and a huge, molten beast appeared from behind her.

"Marik! What have you done?!"

"What's wrong? I thought you'd be pleased to recieve a monster with 3,000 attack points, my dear." Blue Eyes looked at Kay with such a life like expression. You could almost see worry in its sapphire eyes.

"Hmph, I know everything you do comes with a twist, Marik."

"Heh heh."

"Mr. Kaiba, what's the deal?" Adelinda asked.

"Yeah, why did Marik give Kay such a powerful monster?" Mokuba asked.

"Take a look. Lava Golem is now hers and she must deal with all its weaknesses."

"Your monster's beginning to melt!"

"Excuse me?"

"Each turn, Lava Golem melts and you lose lifepoints." Some lava dripped down and burned Kay's arm. She grabbed the spot and groaned.

"Ah!"

"Onee-san!" Blue Eyes made a slight growl, almost as if protesting to the effect. Kay looked up.

"I'm fine! Don't worry."

"You may be fine for now, but your lifepoints aren't. Look." Her points fell to 2700. "Now I place this card facedown and end my move. Now then, why don't you attack me with your monster? He does have 3,000 attack points, the same as your Blue Eyes. And it's more than enough to wipe me out."

"I'm not stupid, I can do the math, Marik."

"So what are you waiting for?" She glared. "I must say, there's not much else you can do." Marik laughed evilly. "Are you beginning to sweat? It's quite hot in Lava Golem's cage."

"Yeah, yeah. It's hot inside a volcano, now I know what that feels like."

"Better make a move before your monster turns up the heat even more." Marik continued laughing.

"ENOUGH! Stop laughing already!"

"Come on! Attack! Or are you scared? You don't really hav emuch of a choice." Marik continued to laugh. Kay growled.

"I SWEAR! The minute I get out of this tihng, I'm gonna smack you so friggin hard to shut you up, Marik. That laugh is so god dang ANNOYING! Give it a frikkin rest!"

"Yeah!" Jounouchi yelled.

"What's wrong? I thought you wanted to rescue Mai from death! Well, now's your chance. Attack me and save your friend!"

"Shut up already! I'll make my move when I'm good and ready." Anzu looked at Yami.

"This isn't so bad. Now Kay's got another monster with 3,000 attack points. How can she lose now?"

"It's not that simple, Anzu. Marik GAVE Kay that monster. He's also trying to tempt her into attacking him, whihc means he must be planning something." Cat nodded.

"And now he's got that new face down card, and who knows what it could be."

"Oh yeah, I forgot to mention, now that your Lord of Dragons is gone, your Curse of Dragon continues to lose attack points thanks to my Plasma Eel!" Kay was shocked painfully.

"Kay-Chan!" Kristen yelled.

"This isn't good, guys!" Honda said.

"She needs to regain control of this due!" Kay stood up, shakily.

"Getting tired?"

"I'm not backing down, Marik."

"Then make a move. I grow impatient."

"And I grow annoyed hearing you blab. So it looks like we're both unhappy." Kay drew a card. "Alright, since you want me to attack so bad, it's only fair I honor your request."

"Excellent. A very wise choice, one of the wisest you've made this entire duel."

"Shut it."

"I guess you've come to your senses. Or..." Marik tilted his head. "Have you finally realized there's absolutely no way you can win this?"

"I've realized the only way to shut you up to blast you off this tower! Attack!"

"Wait! Are you sure about this?" Anzu cried.

"Too late now!" Honda said.

"I can't watch, is it over yet?" Duke asked. Lava Golem blasted an attack.

"Time to block your attack with this! Reveal trap! This card known as Relieve Monster allows me to return one of my monsters to my hand. Once that happenes, I can replae that creature with any 4-star monster I'm holding in my hand."

"Nice move, genius, but you have no monsters!" Kristen yelled.

"Wait, don't forget about his Plama eel on Kay's Curse of Dragon."

"Ah, no way!"

"Plasma Eel, return to me!" Plasma eel vnaished and Marik held its card. "And since it's a 4-star monster, I can bring it back in defense mode." Plasma eels appeared again in time to take Lava Golem's hit. Marik laughed evilly. "Of course, you rememver my Plasma Eel's special ability, don't you? It can't be destroyed in battle."

"So what?"

"So, you can't defeat me."

"Are oyu done?"

"not quite. There's one more thing. Just look. That Lava Golem of yours is beginning to melt now, costing you 700 lifepoints." Lava melted around her, causing Kay's points to fall to 2000. Marik chuckled evilly. "It's all over! Get ready, my move."

"Lovely..." Kay sighed.

"Go, Machine Duplication."

"Machine what?"

"Turn one Eel into 3!" Marik's Eels formed three. Kay glared.

"This can't be good news. He can lower the attack of more monsters." Two Eels swirled around Marik, making odd mechanical noises.

"Now you're beginning to catch on. Go, Plasma Eels!" The Plasma Eels clamped to Lava Golem and Blue Eyes.

"Not Blue Eyes!"

"Drain her monster of points and her body of life!" The Eels zapped her two monsters and Kay fell over from the power of the attack and coughed violently from the force.

"Kay! No!"

"Stay strong!"

"You remember the rule of this duel, don't you? with every attack, you grow weaker!" Marik moved forward, an eye widened grossly. "Soon oyu'll be too hurt to move, let alone duel!"

"You...snake..." Kay hissed, barely able to stand straight now. "I won't lose..."

"Give it up. Don't you know it's hopeless?" Marik laughed evilly. "But since you insist on continuing, I shall place one card face down and let you go if you can stand."

"Well it's about time. If you tihnk I'm gonna let you win this, thne you're even dumber than you look." Kay drew a card. "Heh, I am so glad I'm not you."

"Hm?"

"I play the magic card Malevolent Nuzzler! It increases the attack of any monster I choose by 700. And I decided to use it on your Plasma Eel. And when I do, your Machine Duplication is long gone."

"Grr..."

"That card only works on monsters with 500 attack points or less. So go, Malevolent Nuzzler!"

A green woman appeared and wrapped her arms around Marik's Plasma Eel. It glowed light green and gained 700 attack points.

"Well, accourding to my math, 1200 attack points exceeds the 500 point maximum, which makes your Machine Duplication card's effect null and void. And you know what happens next, right?" The two Plasma Eels shattered. "My Lava Golem and Blue Eyes are free from your magic card."

Marik glared.

"Yes! Go Kay!" Cat and Kristen said.

"That was an awesome move."

"Heck yeah!" Honda high-fived Jounouchi.

"And now, I sacrifice my Curse of Dragon and your Lava Golem to summon my second Blue Eyes."

"No!"

"Yes. Come on out!" Lava Golem and Curse of Dragon vanished and a familiar, blue and white dragon

graced the field alongside the other and roared. Marik stared in shock. Then he stared laughing. "mind saying wha'ts so funny?"

"Your Blue Eyes are strong, but they can't destroy my Plasma Eel. It's invincible! And since it's in defense mode, I don't lose a single life point."

"Wrong!"

"Hm?"

"Your Eel is only invincible in battle, but Magic and Trap cards work just the same. First, I'm gonna play Pot of Greed to draw two more cards. Then, I'll discard one is order to activate this! Lightening Vortex!"

"It's not possible!"

# (A.N: Yeah, I honestly have no clue how many cards Kay has in her hand so forgive me if I'm completely off. I'm just trying to move this duel along.)

"It is. And your Eel is long gone." A bolt of lightening struck the Eel down and Marik stared in shock. "Now, Blue Eyes, attake Marik and make him pay for attaching that Eel to my first dragon! White Lightening!" Blue eyes reared its head.

"Ha! You'd better think again. Reveal the Facedown card, Nightmare Mirror."

"Oh no!"

"Oh yes. Take a close look at the terrified image in my mirror." A demonic looking mirror appear in front of Marik and reflected Kay. "It's you, the new target of your monster's attack! Now feel the lightening attack of your own Blue Eyes." Blue Eyes shattered the mirror. "I escape without a scratch, but you lose 1,000 points."

Marik laughed evilly as Kay's points fell to 1,000.

"Heh, there's only one small price I must pay for this magic card and it is to discard one card from my hand to my graveyard." Marik took a card from his hand. "And this is the perfect card for me to part with for now. Did you honestly think that you could take control of this duel away from me? This is a shadow game, you fool."

"Yeah, yeah. I get it, ok? Can you stop repeating yourself? Quite frankely, it's getting old."

"Heh heh."

"I end my turn."

"A wise choice."

"Just go, Marik."

"Are you ready? My move." Marik drew a card. Marik's eyes widened and he started laughing, more manically than ever. Kay got a sick feeling in her stomach when she heard him. Worry filled her from head to toe.

"Enough with the laughing! Play a card and move on!" She sounded cool, but inside she was in panic. That look on Marik was not good. He had something big. She feared this might be the end of the duel for her, even with her Blue Eyes.

If Marik could use his God card on her, it was all over.

"You'll regret those words, foolish girl, for I'm about to eliminate you from this duel once and for all with Ra." Her eyes went wide.

"I was afraid of this."

"with Ra?!" Kristen, Honda, Jounouchi, Cat, Alex, Anzu, and Duke all said in unison.

"His Egyptian God Card." Mokuba looked at Seto.

"Seto, now's your chance to find out the weaknesses of Ra." He heard a soft whimper of fright and looked at Adelinda. She had gone white and looked completely terrified. "I mena, as soon as Kay figures it out. She'll find its weaknesses and win!"

But Adelinda didn't hear the attempt at comfort. She was feeling sometihng but pure terror. Would Mairk win? would he kill her other big sister too?

"Kay!" Adelinda yelled. "Please stop dueling!" Everyone stared at her. "I can't lose you too! It was painful enough to lose Mom and Liz." Kay's eyes went a bit wider. "For my sake, forfeit now!"

Everyone was confused. What could she mean? Not even Alex knew what Adelinda was talking about. Kay's face darkened.

"I'm sorry, Adelinda."

"Huh?"

"I can't back down! Not now, not ever. If I walk away from this duel because I quit, I will not ever be able to face myself again. It's not only a matter of pride, I'm not about to let a friend die at my feet." she looked at her. "Have faith in me! I will not die!"

Adelinda looked up. Kay smiled a bit.

"I promise." Adelinda bit her lip and nodded.

"Then win!"

"I'm afraid there's no hope for oyu now. I activate the magic card, monster reborn to bring back Ra!" Wind picked up around Marik. "Show yourself my great beast of the sky!" The red hologram of the monster reborn card vanished and two golden wings were piercing through the sky. Kay stared in both shock and fear.

Everyone gaped. He was actually going to summon Ra! The wind grew more powerful and blew everywhere.

They all covered their faces with an arm as a shield from the gusts. Marik laughed evilly. The wings moved aside to reveal the golden beast.

"This is the last monster you will ever see, Kay Simms."

"But Marik's monster has zero attack points."

"How can it win?" Alex asked Yami.

"I don't know. What kind of strategy is that?" Yami asked.

"First, I'll activate Ra's ability of Instant Attack so it can attack now. But that's just the beginning of your troubles." Ra released a burst of golden fire from its mouth.

"What's going on?" Cat asked.

"It looks like Ra is transforming."

"Into what?" Alex asked. Golden fire engulfed the dragon abd it became a giant, flaming bird.

"Behold the true form of Ra."

"What?" Kristen asked.

"Yo, tell us what's going on here! 'Cause where I'm from, giant flaming birds are not a good thing!"

"Yeah, give it to us straight!" Honda yelled. Kay glared up at Ra.

"My Sun Dragon has taken the form of Egyptian God Phoenix. In this mode, Ra is unstoppable!"

"It's awesome..." Mokuba whispered, eyes wide with wonder.

"Yes, and soon it will belong to me."

"Now my beast is ready! Ready to tear you apart and feast on your soul!" Marik laughed evilly. "Now that my beast has taken its strongest form, victory is mine!" Ra growled. "Pharaoh!"

Yami looked at Marik.

"Kaiba!" Seto looked at Marik."Take heed, for one of you will have to realizeyour darkest nightmare nad face my Sun Dragon Ra in the next round."

"Marik!" He looked at Kay. "Would you JUST get on with your stupid attack?! This is REALLY starting to piss me off."

"Oh, anxious to die, are we?"

"I already told you, I will not die! And in case you haven't notcied, Ra has no attack points, one Blue Eyes has 3,000, the other 2,500. How do you propose to win?" Marik chuckled softly.

"You still don't get it, Kay. Like I said, Ra has powers beyond your understanding." Kay growled.

"He's right. I can't remember all of its powers and how they work. I might be able to read the text on Ra, but I'm far from an expert."

"And unfortunately for you, I'm about to activate yet another of my creature's special abilities."

"Not another one!"

"Yes! In its Phoenix mode, Ra can instantly disintegrate your monster even though it has zero attack points. All I'm required to do is give up 1,000 of my lifepoints. Then Ra will be free to kill you."

"So what? Even if you destroy my Blue Eyes, my lifepoints won't be harmed."

"Don't you know? Losing lifepoints should be the least of your worries now. Look down." Kay looked to see two energy streams connecting her to both of her dragons. "Thanks to that energy stream, when Ra attacks, you will be completely drained of all power and die! Nobody can live through the devastating attack of an Egyptian God Card." Marik laughed evilly. "In a few short moments, you will lose what remains of your life."

"Onee-san!"

"It can't be!" Alex yelled.

"Kay!" Kristen cried.

"You'll be rendered completely useless before my Sun Dragon, Ra. The time has come." Marik held up an arm. "I'm moments away from claiming my victory! The Phoenix rises tonight!" The millennium eye on his forehead glowed. "The time has arrived."

#### (A.N: GET ON WITH IT ALREADY!!! GEEZ! This episode takes so friggin long!)

"Sun Dragon Ra, attack her second Blue Eyes and drain her soul!" Ra moved forward with a blinding light towards Kay's dragon with 3,000 attack points.

(Yes, Ra can only attack one monster. I checked two places, I'm pretty sure I'm right.)

"There is nothing that can prepare you for the devistation you're about to endure." Marik laughed, yet again. A giant, red and gold beam erupted with a blinding light from the divine phoenix and blasted toward Blue Eyes. The impact of the attack was so powerful, it completely shook the ground.

Fires burts around her and she cried out from the extreme power of this attact/

"There's no escape from the fury of the most supreme Egyptian God!"

"Fight it, Kay!" Everyone stared in shock and fear at the display in front of them.

"Can you feel your soul rushing to escape your body and leave it as a hollow, lifeless shell?" Marik asked. He laughed.

"We've got to help her!" Anzu cried.

"Seto, thi sis nuts! Marik's gone way too far!" Mokuba cried. "We have to stop this duel now before tihngs get worse!" Seto said nothing.

Blue Eyes roared through the power of the fire. It was destroye.d

"Your Blue Eyes is gone! And you're about to follow, so return to me, my great beast! Your task is now complete." Ra made a low type of trilling noise and flew back to Marik, leaving a large cloud of smoke behind it that covered Kay. Her remaining Blue Eyes roared.

"When the smoke clears, you'll be nothing but a lovely corpse." He smirked. "And then, your soul will be fed into the darkness." The smoke started to clear and Marik stared in shook.

"It can't be!" But it was. Standing there, in the midst of the smoke, was Kay. Her body was hunched weakly, but there was no denying that she was still standing and very much alive. "No one can withstand the devistating fury of an Egyptian God monster! No one!"

"She's alive!" Alex cried, tears of relief forming in her eyes. Cat and Kristen hugged eahc other in disbelief, tears also forming. Adelinda was crying a little herself, but a smile was forming on her sweet face.

"Kay made it!" Blue Eyes roared again, a, dare I say it, happier sound.

"Kay!" Everyone crie,d looks of combined shock and relief on their faces. Even Seto was baffled by this.

"She's standing!" Yami cried.

"But for how long?" Anzu asked.

"C'mon! You can still win, Kay!" Jounouchi called. "I know you can!" Kay opened her eyes. They were blank, but she was breathing.

"No! You can't! You should be dead by now!"

"I...don't...think so..." Kay growled, taking a deep breath. She blinked and the shine of life returned to her green eyes. She was sore, God she hurt everywhere. Her body begged for her to collapse and rest, but she fought it.

Kay imagined herself in the finals. Yugi and Seto both looked down at her, determined grins on their faces. She smirked back at them.

"Wait for me...both of you...!"Il win this and have the honor to fight one of you..." The vision vanished.

Marik stared in shock, sweat forming on his ugly face, an eye twitching.

"If she succeeds in attacking my lifepoints, I'll lose the duel and my Egyptian God card."

"Alright, this is it...It's my turn now and you're wide open..." Ra finally vanished from the field. Marik was twitching more.

"This can't be happening!"

"Oh yeah! Kay beat Marik at his own twisted game!"

"And since Marik could only destroy one Blue Eyes, all she has to do is call out the attack and she wins!"

"Kay's gonna beat him!" Kristen cried.

"And she'll make it all the way to the finals!" Cat added.

"This is awesome! Go Kay!" Mokuba cried happily. Seto was in total shock.

"How did she withstand Ra?" He took a moment and then a small smsirk formed on his face. "I guess she's tougher than she looks. No matter, Ra will soon be mine anyway. I guess I'd rather face someone without much clue as to how to use it."

"Make oyur move, Kay, and end his madness!"

"And don't lose to that creep. If you made it this far." Everyone looked at Seto. Kay smiled a little, feeling oddly comforted by Seto's words.

"I don't plan to lose..." She drew a card but ignored it. Blue Eyes, she placed her faith in her beloved Dragon.

"It all comes down to this. Blue Eyes will end this for me. I knew it wouldn't let me down."

"Blue Eyes..." she closed her eyes. "Attack Marik...directly..." Blue Eyes reared its head back as the power of its attack. Kay finally felt her body start to fail her.

She opened her eyes again, just a little, so she could see her monster.

It unleashed its white lightening.

"I win..."

The attack hit Marik.

"This can't be!" he yelled.

Kay's eyes closed again.

"Thanks...Blue Eyes...you never fail me..." She took another breath and the minutes Marik's lifepoints hit zero, Kay hit the ground, eyes closed, no motion in her.

"She did it!" Everyone yelled. There eyes widened as the smoke cleared.

"KAY!" Adelinda screamed. Blue Eyes looked at her and roared again, louder than bfore and flew to its fallen master, looking at her. Then, the hologram was gone.

Marik clutched his side, lifepoints at zero. But he was still his same, demented self.

Roland stared on, not sure what to do.

"Who won?!" he yelled. "I can't pick a winner. Marik's lifepoints have reached zero, but Miss Kay is out cold!"

"KAY! PLEASE WAKE UP!" Alex yelled.

"KAY-CHAN!" Kristen cried. Cat covered her face with her hands and shook her hands.

"It can't be!"

"She needs help." Seto got onto the platform with shocking speed and looked at Kay. He felt for a pulse.

"She's still alive. Roland, call for a midic team stat."

"Right away, sir." Everyone ran onto the stage as the fog from the shadow game cleared. Seto stood up and let her friends take her.

"She has thirty minutes to wake up. If she doesn't she's disqualified."

"WHAT DO YOU MEAN?!" Jounouchi yelled. "Kay won that duel, fair and square!"

"That may be. But if she's out cold by the time of the last match, what good is she?" He glared.

"You jerk."

"thirty minutes." Seto walked away.

"Come on, let's get her to her room."

"good plan, Mokuba." Honda picked Kay up. Marik looked at them.

"To think, I came so close to losing." he growled. "Well, it doesn't matter. She is dead now." He walked away.

O\_O ...oh...my...God... THIS CAME OUT PERFECT!!!! I HAVE DONE IT!!! \*Dances\* My duel is perfect! I am so friggin happy it came out this way. YES!!! ...just don't kill me please.

Kay. \*Picks her up and moves her aside\* You're gonna stay there for the next few chappies and be less important, ok?

Kay: Alright. Can I watch movies?

Kay-Chan: Yes.

Kay: Sweet. \*Sits in a chair and grabs a remote and turns on TV\* Ooh, Step Up. ... I need popcorn.

Kay-Chan: Kitchen is over here.

Kay: Thanks. \*Gets up and goes to make popcorn.\*

Kay-Chan: Extra butter for me, please!

Kay: Got it!

## 28 - She won't wake up!

OH MY GOD!!! I'm FINALLY updating. It's a miracle!! I wanna dedicate the update to Ki-Ki, because she made me feel all special today when I said I was gonna update, she said that she'd been waiting for the fic to be updated. That's very flattering. And to Cat who is gonna be UBER special for the next couple of chapters.

Kay's just sitting here with me, eating popcorn.

Kay: Hello. \*Waves\*

Kay-Chan: So enjoy! \*Munches on popcorn\*

"She still won't wake up!"

"C'mon, Kay!" Alex grabbed hold of her friend's hand. Kay lay on a bed, numerous wires attached to her, her eyes still closed. Two doctors were in the room, running diagnostics, the works.

Everyone stood around her. Mokuba, Adelinda, Alex, Cat, and Kristen were right at her sides, everyone either sat soemwhere or stood a few feet away to give them some space. Yami watched and Yugi was starting to cry.

"It's not fair! Why did Marik have to take her soul? She beat him!"

"But the shadows themselves may have taken her before she could defeat him, Yugi. It was bad timing."

"I should have been the one to fight Marik!" The millennium puzzle glowed and Yugi stood there, tears in his eyes. Jounouchi turned around and looked at his friend.

"Yugi?" He sniffed.

"This is all my fault."

"What are ya talking about?"

"I should have faced Marik and not let Kay do it. Now she's dying because of me!"

"Yugi, don't say that!" Jounouchi said. "It's not your fault. Not by a long shot."

"But it IS, Jounouchi. Don't you see that?" Yugi cried, tears running down his face rapidly. Kristen looked up at Yugi.

"Jounouchi's right, Yugi..." she said softly. "It's not your fault. There was nothing you could have done."

"I could have faced Marik instead!"

"I'm not sure about that." Yugi looked up at her. "She wanted to face him. I doubt she would have let you interfere with that, Yugi." Alex nodded.

"Kristen's right."

"Still!"

"Yugi." Kristen stood up and walked over to him, offering a tissue. "Please stop crying. I'm upset about this too. But right now, you need to focus on beating Kaiba so you can fight Marik and bring her back." Yugi looked at her then accepted the tissue and dried his eyes.

"Thank you, Kristen." His smile could have lit up a room. She blushed a pale pink and nodded with a shy smile.

"Sure thing, Yugi." The door opened and Seto walked into the room.

"Nii-sama."

"Has she regained consciousness?" he asked curtly. Jounouhci glared.

"No, rich-boy, she hasn't! When are we flying this thing to get to a real hospital?"

"We're not."

"WHAT?!" he yelled. Cat stood up.

"Are you kidding me, Kaiba?"

"Look, this is my tournament and my airship so what I say goes. If you can find yourself another flight ou of here, you're more than welcome to leave. But if not, you're stuck here until I say otherwise." Jounouchi clanech his fist and gritted his teeth.

"You bastard!" he snapped. Seto smirked.

"I'd watch my language if I were you, mutt."

"I'll show you language!" He rolled up his sleeve.

"Settle down, Jounouchi." Shizuka frowned at him. "Now's not the time of be picking a fight."

"And he takes orders from little girls? Heh, what a wuss." **(ANTISILENTSHIPPING!)** Shizuka glared at him.

"Do you always have to be so mean, Kaiba?"

"To annoying brats like him, yes."

"Why?" she asked.

"It's fun." Anzu stood in front of him, her hands on her hips.

"What's so fun about this, Kaiba? Two people are dying right here right now because of YOUR tournament." She narrowed her blue eyes. "I'm sure this will give Kaiba Corp. some good publicity." (AZURESHIPPING FOREVER!) Seto scowled.

"Look, Mazaki. Whatever happened to your friends is not my problem nor is it my fault. I did not do anything to them and oyu can't blame Kaiba Corp. for any of this."

"It was your tournament!"

"It could have happened at anyone's tournament, Mazaki!"

"Hey, cut it out!" Honda snapped.

"Stay out of this."

"No, Kaiba, I won't. Fighting isn't getting us anywhere." Seto rolled his eyes.

"Whatever, I need to prapare myself for the next match." He started to leave the room. "Oh, and in case you weren't keeping track, it's past thirty minutes." The door closed behind him.

Everyone stood there for a moment before what Kaiba had just said registered fully into their dazed minds.

"WHAT?!" Jounouchi yelled.

"That means she's disqualified?" Tori, Alex, and Kristen asked.

"How can he do that?" Anzu snapped.

"C'mon, let's go knock a few teeth out and some sense into him!" Jounouchi yelled, clenching his fists and striking the stereotypical "tough guy" pose.

"Jounouchi, you know that won't work!" Yugi sighed. "We can't change Kaiba's mind." Cat stepped forward.

"Oh yes we can." She walked out of the room.

"Hey, Cat!" Jounouchi, Anzu, Honda, Duke, Mokuba, Adelinda, and Yugi ran after her. Everyone else chose to stay in the room.

"Hey Kaiba!"

"Hm?" He turned around. "Well, if it isn't the dork parade. What a surprise." Cat stopped in front of him.

"I challenge you to a duel!" Seto chuckled.

"What? I'm suppossed to be impressed? Stick with the minor leagues, Truesdale. It'll spare you the humiliation."

"If I win, you let Kay stay registered as a finalist and kick Marik out!" Seto stopped and looked at her.

"Why on Earth would I agree to that?"

"Because, if you don't duel, Yugi won't either."

"What do you mean?"

"You can't call it defeating the King of Games unless oyu actually duel him. And if he doesn't duel and the public finds out oyu win by forfeit, questions will be asked. Catch my drift, Kaiba?" Cat asked, raising an eyebrow.

Seto stared down at her coldly.

"You little..." he mumbled. "Fine! Be outside the tower in five minutes. And let me promise you, I'll wipe that smirk off your face and you'll never want to pick up a card again by the time I'm done with you." With that, Seto stalked off.

"Cat, are you sure about this?" Anzu asked.

"I'm sure! My friend needs my help, and I'm determinied to beat Kaiba." Yugi switched to Yami abnd he walked over to Cat, placing a hand on her shoulder.

"We'll all be right here beside oyu. Here." He handed her his duel disk. "You'll need it for the duel."

"Thank you, pharaoh."

"Well c'mon!" Jounouchi yelled. "This is the duel of the century right here, folks." Everyone laughed a little then ran down the corridor to exit the tower. Mokuba had left to go after Seto, and Adelinda stayed with Cat and the group.

And here's the first update, now to start on the second one.